





# LITTLE BROTHER;

AND

## OTHER GENRE-PICTURES.

BY

FITZ HUGH LUDLOW,

AUTHOR OF "THE HASHEESH EATER," "REGULAR HABITS,"  
"AMONG THE MORMONS," "SEVEN WEEKS IN THE  
GREAT YO-SEMITES," ETC. ETC.

"Maxima reverentia pueris debetur." — JUVENAL.

BOSTON:  
LEE AND SHEPARD.

1867.

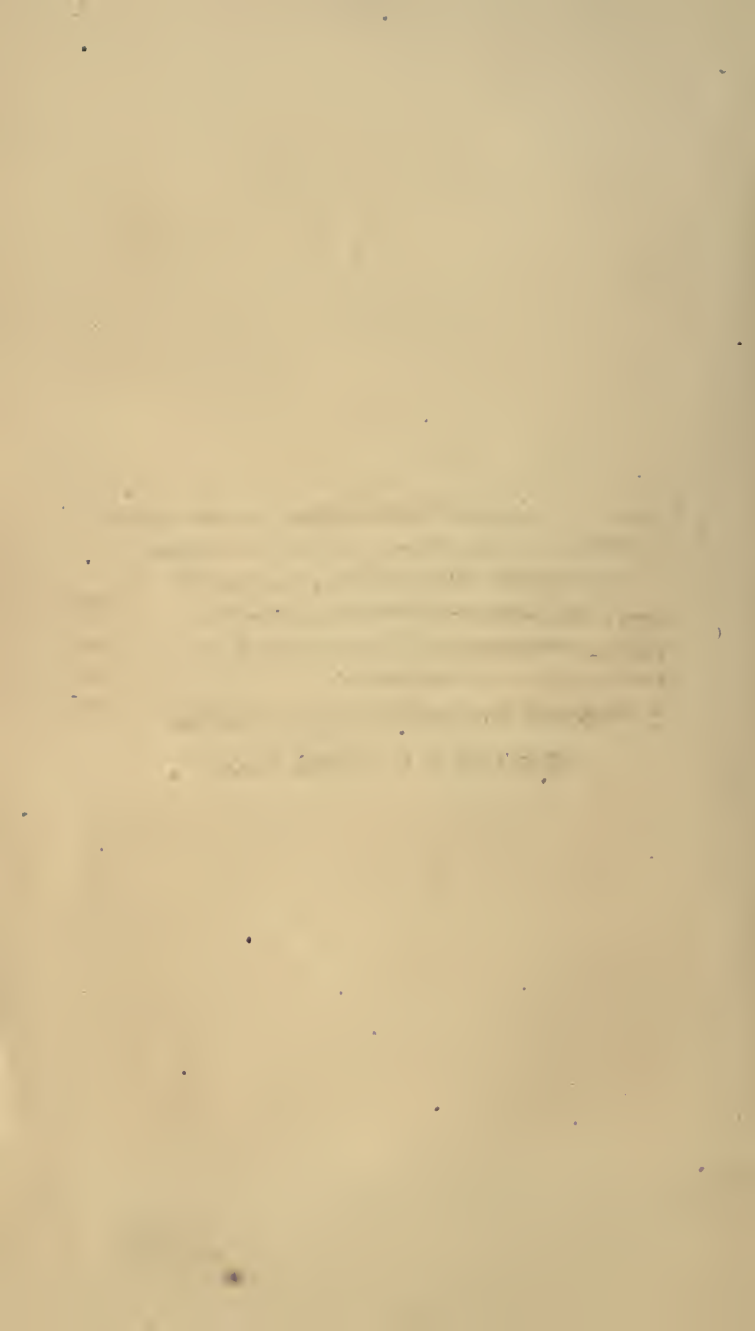
Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1867, by

LEE & SHEPARD,

In the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the District of Massachusetts.



IN MIND OF A COURTESY TO WHICH THREE PICTURES IN THIS  
CABINET OWE THEIR PRESENT SETTING, AND A LARGE-  
HEARTEDNESS WHICH FROM THE BEGINNING OF  
HIS CAREER HAS AFFORDED INSUMERABLE  
HELPS TO THEIR ARTIST, THEY ARE  
INSCRIBED TO  
*THAT WISE AND GENEROUS FRIEND OF LETTERS,*  
FLETCHER HARPER, Esq.



## CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
LITTLE BROTHER . . . . .	9
FLEEING TO TARSHISH . . . . .	107
LITTLE BRIGGS AND I . . . . .	195
A BRACE OF BOYS . . . . .	245

Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2007 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation

# LITTLE BROTHER.



## I.

### A BOY TOO MUCH.



T was of no use to tell Kate that Augustus — of the same surname, and aged seven years — was a sweet little fellow. He *ought* to be, considering the number of paper-bags, labelled “Stewart’s Assorted Candies,” he consumed per week. Of as little use to say he was a child: there were some children who didn’t put newspapers on the strings of their sister’s piano, and play it was a banjo. Oh! he would outgrow it, would he? Then, why wasn’t he sent away somewhere till he did? Or put into something, and locked up? Or put under somewhere, — a large barrel, for instance, with the head knocked out to give him air, as they do with young tomatoes and pie-plants till they arrive at an age when they can come to the table?

Then Kate Jones’s mother — just like a mother, as she was! — assumed the part of a tenderer variety of Judge-Advocate; and while she acknowledged that the

little Augustus *did* almost exhaust her patience on occasions, recalled a number of very pretty ways he had, nice things he had done, affectionate words he had said, and the truly good heart that the child possessed beneath all his boy-mischief!

For instance: Did not Kate remember how, when the family was boarding at the St. Jiminy, — that gilded cage, where families not yet able, in their own estimation, to be happily domestic in a house of their own at a moderate price, were accommodated with facilities for being very fashionably miserable at an exorbitant one, — the dear little fellow had once shown such an affectionate solicitude for his mother and sister? How, when, after wondering all one Friday why the washerwoman didn't come home with the clothes, — because they wanted to darn the stockings and see the shirts all right, — they found, in the evening, that she *had* come in the forenoon, while they were shopping down-town, and that Gus had taken all the clothes out of the basket, and put them away in all sorts of inconceivable drawers, presses, and trunks, before the two ladies returned; and when he was asked if he had anything to say why the sentence of being spanked until he was red should not be passed upon him, he sobbed, and put his little fists into his eyes, and faltered out something which led them to understand that the "Song of the Shirt," read by his father to them all, three evenings before, had left such an impression on his young mind that he had hidden the clothes, to prevent his mother and sister sewing

on them and dying of consumption? Didn't Kate remember that?

Yes; Kate *did* remember it. And she remembered also another occasion, since they had rented their present house in Twenty-third street, when the *dear little fellow* drove away from their connection one of the most aristocratic young gentlemen in all New York society, — young Schumakers Fyndings. To be sure *his* papa did business down in some awful place that *her* papa called the Swamp; but Kate didn't believe *he* ever went there, or knew anything about where it was, even. Both directly and indirectly his papa might have furnished the calf-skin for his delicate polished boots; but there was not the slightest suspicion of the ancestral leather about him otherwise. No, not in the least! And he would have been such a desirable person to know, — but for that little pest! And Kate went on rapidly to recite how Master Augustus, contrary to her own mature advice, had been permitted to "sit up" at the party, and had the little Misses Blummerie invited over to make it pleasant for him; and yet, ingrate that he was, when the gentlemen were all out in the hall, ready to go, after the breaking-up, and Harold Fitz-Blacktease, the son of the China trader, came downstairs, and said, "Fellahs! who's got a cigar for me to smoke on my way home?" and no man gave unto him, how that wretched Augustus, leaning over the balcony at his side, with slow, unmoving finger selected young Fyndings out of the throng, and said, in a voice distinctly

audible to all present, "*He's got some; he has: I saw him take six out of papa's box up in the gentlemen's dressing-room, and they're in the inside pocket of his Raglan!*" And how young Fyndings turned the color of his papa's boot-top morocco, and, in a humiliated manner, extended one of the said six to Fitz-Blacktease; and how *she* nearly dropped with mortification; and how young Fyndings never came to make his party call — nor, indeed, a call of any description — afterward. Did her mamma remember *that*?

And, only to weary her with one instance more: Could she recall the time when Master Augustus turned to that distinguished foreigner, M. Pâté de Perigord, who was dining with them previous to taking Kate to see the performance of "ze inimitable Sharl Mattieu" in the "Critic," with Brougham, Burton, Walcot, and Lizzie Weston, at the Metropolitan, and asked him, "Have you got a large salary?" and upon the distinguished foreigner answering, in his pretty, broken way, with a disguised surprise, that he had "not ze salaire at all," the *enfant terrible* bent a severe gaze upon him, and demanded, "How can you afford to take my sister to Burton's *then*?" And, in general, was it among possible remembrances that, on New-Year's days, the formidable infant stood sucking innumerable consecutive oranges at the foot of the front-steps, and shaking with juicy hands the lavender kids of the gentlemen who came to pay their compliments; or, tiring of that amusement, ascended to the parlor, borrowed the visit-



ors' hats, asked them where they got them, what they paid for them, and, with the same succulent hands, brushed the nap the wrong way ?

In fine, was it on the record how *that* Augustus never ceased to behave himself in the most heart-rending and peace-dispelling, odious manner, at all times and places, universal and particular ? Was it, or was it not ? That was all !

At this moment the angel spoken of showed his wings. A harbinger voice in the entry cried, "Porgies ! Here-er yer fresh porgies ! Here they go-o-oh !" The door opened, and the terrible child came in. His head, which just reached to the door-knob, was covered with a thicket of corn-silky curls; and, having parted from the comb on bad terms before breakfast, had not made up with it since. His cheeks were plump as mellow Spitzenbergs, and quite as red, with overmuch shouting of his imaginary wares. These — to wit, the porgies — consisted of a selection from the valuable annuals and vases which ought to have occupied the drawing-room centre-table, and were borne in the hollow bottom of an embroidered footstool, turned upside down, its floss and worsted suffering undesirable attrition with the carpet; and the whole establishment, thus improvised, was fastened to his waist by an elegant groseille silken cord and tassel from his mother's morning-dress, which cost at the least twelve shillings at Peyser's. His eyes were a mischievous twinkling hazel: young as he was, there was an air of old waggishness about him, a sense of the

ludicrous, which promised the true man of humor when a few more years in this mixed world should have added pathos to his fun. But, at present, he was only the dear, naughty little rogue, — one of those children that you are forever wanting to whip at one end and kiss at the other.

Kate had worked the footstool which this lad was desecrating. With a fateful sternness and an agony of mind which did not express itself in words, for these had proved useless long ago, she put down the under-sleeve she was crocheting, and marching up to her brother, began disengaging the cord and tassel from his waist.

“Take care, Kate,” said the child, with a shake of his head: “I’m a horse. You’re afraid of horses, you know, and this one is a very bad one. He kicks, and bites, and runs away, and does everything that’s bad. Oh, he’s an awful horse! Porgies! here-er yer fresh porgies! here they go-o-oh!”

And he burst away from the young girl to career around the room faster than Kate’s offended dignity chose to follow him.

“My son, take off that cord and sit down for a moment. I want to talk to you.” This was said very calmly by the mother of Augustus.

“Yes, mamma, I will. I’m a good horse to people that treat me kindly and don’t make me shy; so I’ll just take my harness off and listen. May I stand up,

mamma, while you're talking? Horses never sit down, you know."

"Yes, my dear, come and stand up by my side and let me take your hand." Augustus obeyed, with very good grace. Kate resumed her crocheting in silence, and the mother said to the child:—

"My son, do you love me—very much indeed?"

"Yes, mamma, I love you—six bushels."

"Why do you love me, Augustus?"

"Because you're good."

"Don't you want to be loved, my dear little son?"

"Yes, I want people to love me, if they wont call me a monkey, and an owl, and good-for-nothing, and say I ought to be whipped, and sent to bed, and have my hair brushed, and everything mean." (This with a glance at Miss Jones, who did not appear to hear it.)

"Don't you think *I* love you, Augustus?"

"Yes, you do, mamma."

"Why do I love you, Augustus?"

"Because I'm naughty."

"Wouldn't you like to be loved because you were good?"

"Wouldn't I die if I were good?"

"Why, what do you mean, Augustus?"

"Wouldn't I have to be an angel, and with the angels stand, a crown upon my forehead, a harp within my hand? *That's* what I mean: that's what little Jimmy Stilton did, and he was good, Kate said. He wanted to be an angel, *he* did. *I* don't, because he died; and

he didn't know what knuckle-down was ! And he thought that top-time came before kite-time ! And if he's got a harp I don't believe he can play it, for he couldn't do anything with a jews-harp, and a harp's an awful lot harder, — isn't it, mamma ? ”

“ Don't say ‘ an awful lot,’ dear; say ‘ a great deal.’ Oh, how sorry I am to think my little boy wouldn't like to be an angel ! You can be an angel and *live*, too, Augustus; you can be an angel, and stay to make us all very happy.”

“ I know it; you're an angel, mamma. Give me a *great big* kiss ! ”

“ There, dear ! there are two instead of one for you ! But let me talk to you a little more; did you never read the pretty books you get at school, about being good ? ”

“ Yes, mamma, and that's just it ! Don't all the good children in books die ? Don't Nathan Dickerman sit on a chair in his picture, with something very bad the matter with his back, and don't *he* die when he's only ten years old ? And don't little Mary Lathrop die when she's eight ? and didn't she turn round when her brother slapped her, and say, ‘ Hit me on the other cheek, *dear* ? ’ I'd ha' *deared* him ! I wish I'd been there; I'd ha' *lammed* him, *I* would ! ”

“ But don't my little son remember that all the naughty children in the books get terribly punished for it, — say, my little Augustus ? ”

“ Oh, yes, *they* die, too ! they go out in boats on Sun-

day, and get tipped up; and in the pictures you can't see anything but their hands sticking above the water, and nobody comes to pull them out. Or they go up into trees to hook birds' nests, and the limb always breaks, and then they get it! Oh, cracky! *don't* they? Everybody dies, in books; good boys die, and naughty boys die!"

"What are you going to do, then, Augustus, if the good boys and naughty boys both die?"

"I—I—I—" Here Augustus stopped and scratched his head in deep meditation. Finally he brightened up with the discovery of a capital idea. "I guess," said Augustus, "that I wont be *very* naughty, nor *very* good; I'll be *half-an'-half*! and then I'll keep alive fornever and never!"

"O Augustus! Very well! half-and-half is better than very naughty; and I'm afraid that my little boy is *that*, too, sometimes."

"Yes, I am; I'm very naughty to-day; for I've been playing porgies with the books, and the vases, and the footstool, and your cord. But I wont do it any more. And I'm very naughty to Kate, too, to-day; but I always *am* naughty to *her*, because she's so naughty to me,—and, besides, I do hate that Spindle-shanks!"

"Augustus! I shall punish you, if you call your sister names!"

"I aint a-callin *her* names; *she* isn't spindle-shanks."

"Who do you mean, then, Augustus?"

"I mean that old thing, Mr. Lilykid, who is all the

time coming to see Kate, and drinking papa's Champagne, and dancing polkas with Kate, and taking her to the opera, and calling me 'sonny!' Just as I was coming upstairs with the porgies Johnson let him in, and asked me would I tell Kate that a gentleman was in the parlor; and he's been here ever since, cooling his heels while I was up here talking,—that's what Johnson calls it when he has to wait. What does 'cooling his heels' mean, mamma?"

"Good Heavens!" ejaculated Kate; "and you never told me of it, you wicked, wicked boy! If you don't whip him for *this*, mother, I shall think you mean to let him rush headlong to destruction!"

So saying, she jerked the bell-pull, as if it were Master Augustus's ear, and communicated with some faintly tintinnabulating conscience in the basement of his system, instead of merely sounding an alarm to Johnson in the kitchen, who straightway knocked at the door.

"Go down immediately to the parlor, Johnson," said Miss Jones, in a tone whose sternness was just enough smothered to fall short of the guest below, "and tell Mr. Lilykid that, by a mistake, I was only informed just now of his being here, and will see him directly. And remember, Johnson, never, on any occasion when you have a message for me, to give it to Master Augustus, but bring it *yourself*."

"Directly" is an idea of such wonderful elasticity that, in the seventh sphere of the spiritual world, where Mrs. Hatch informs us that we shall be clothed with



ideas in lieu of matter, it will probably answer to the India-rubber of this present gross life, and be manufactured into all sorts of ethereal overshoes, belting, shoulder-straps, water-proof coats, and stretchable arrangements whatsoever, by some Horace Day of that stage of existence. "Directly," with the soldier and sailor, means as long as it takes to turn on their heels; with the waiter at the eating-house where I lunch, it means as soon as the fat man in the next box has ceased to be hungry, thirsty, and morning-paper-ivorous; with young ladies in general, it signifies any conceivable time, from half an hour and rising, in which a lovely mauve barége robe may be put on, its skirt, under-skirt, and over-skirt shaken down, so as to lie airily over those magnificent thirty-spring skirts, with tapes woven in and adjustable bustles, created by the wondrous Mrs. Peddie, of Bowery, just below Bleecker street. This was what "directly" meant with Miss Kate Jones in particular.

With a sweet smile upon her pretty mouth, — which was *not* the result of saying "papa, propriety, poultry prunes, prisms," but of a still better recipe, — the banishment of all thoughts concerning that dreadful Augustus, — she descended to the parlor, and met Mr. Lilykid with a voice from the "Young Lady's Behavior-Book" and a bow from the third figure of the Lancers. Mr. Lilykid, being a gentleman who ran entirely to the small and well-polished toes of good society, either had no heels to cool or ignored them completely, reciprocating

the greeting as if he had only come in within the last three minutes.

"Did any one ever see such a contretemps?" warbled Kate, with a light-hearted laugh. "Here you have been kept waiting, so rudely, I don't know how long,—it must be ten minutes, I dare say."

"Oh, h-a-a-adly! ha-a-adly!" murmured Mr. Lilykid, in gallant deprecation. "What's that pwetty thing the poet says?—'How softly falls the foot of Time that only tweads on flowahs!' And to expect Miss Jones,—oh, that is to twead on damask woses,—otto of woses! Weally, I feel as if I were not only on an ottoman, but an otto-man myself, now that you ah heah! Ha! he! he! he!"

"You are very kind, I'm sure, as well as very witty! You must have thought you were going to be fastened to your ottoman for a thousand years, like the King in the Palace of Sleepers; but it's all that darling little rogue of a brother of mine! Johnson very improperly confided his message to him, and he went off to play, as children will, and forgot all about it. What do you find to amuse yourself with now, in town? It's so dreadfully dull, and everybody's leaving for the Springs, or Newport, or Europe. We're going out next week; we would have gone this, but papa always likes to go with us, and he wanted to stay for the Bremen steamer. What *do* you find to do?"

(Mr. Lilykid will excuse me for translating his *bon*



ton-ese into English hereafter, as its drawl is painful to vulgar ears.)

“My dear Miss Jones, a man devoted to good society always has enough to do! I sometimes see friends of mine feeling quite miserably, — *blasé*, in fact, — and I always say to them, ‘Eustis,’ or ‘Ainsley,’ or ‘Belle-mountain,’ as the case may be, ‘really, how can you? Do you know your duty to your set? Do you reflect that you’ll be called on to be an ornament to it next winter, — to exert yourself for its benefit, — to make yourself agreeable in every way? And yet you are idle! I declare it’s a shame!’ For there are so many things a man devoted to good society can do to keep himself in practice, you know. Dear me! I could not excuse myself to my conscience if I were idle!”

“You say I know, but I *don’t* know. Tell me, for I feel a sincere interest in knowing. I really supposed that all that gentlemen found to occupy themselves with, after the winter was over and before the summer season began, was to lie on a sofa and color their meerschauins!”

“Aw, really! I confess to the meerschauin; but then, that’s only my relaxation. I never permit myself to take it up unless my mind has been on the stretch for some time, and wants unbending, you know. Business first, pleasure afterward; and I have so much to keep me busy every day that I don’t think much of mere selfish gratification, — till evening, at least.”

“But you don’t go down-town, like poor papa, into that dreadful Wall street?”

“Ha-a-a-adly! When I say business, I don’t mean stocks, and rents, and dividends, and all that: my lawyer attends to those things for me. Left an orphan at a very early age, with a large property, consisting almost entirely of real estate widely scattered through the rural districts, I don’t know what I should have done, young as I was, and careless of my own interests,—as I still am,—if it hadn’t been for my having a capable business man, who was faithfully attached to our family, and who comes between me and all my tenants, and others who want to talk about money. My business is something quite different, I assure you. You see, Miss Jones, from my youngest days I have been devoted to good society. I live for it. I may say it is my meat and my drink to do my duty to good society. And at this season, when everybody else is voting it dull and lounging about, I say to myself, ‘Lorenzo Lilykid, no lounging for you, my boy! What are you going to do to-day for good society?’ That’s when I rise, you know. Well, you see, something always presents itself. Take to-day, for instance. I reflect, while I am taking my morning coffee, that there’s serious danger of my billiards getting down. I’m startled by remembering that the last time I played was with little Tom Tibbits, — fortnight next Friday, — only pocket-game, — excuse me for being technical, — know it’s very shoppy, — gave him thirty points, — beat him easily, — no sort of prac-

tice in *that*. If I lose my game, there's one duty to good society gone,—dead smash! So I walk down to Phelan's, take the cue, and play a carom game, even, with Frank Toler,—splendid cue, he!—and just beat him by three points! There's one duty to good society fulfilled,—feel happier, stronger,—conscious of not giving way to loose habits. That lasted half an hour; and when it was over; I began to reflect again. A man devoted to good society *must* reflect,—can't rush headlong, you know,—it seems quite unprincipled for a man with duties, and we all have those, of course."

"Of course!" assented Kate, deferentially, awe-struck by the moral grandeur of the individual.

"When I reflect, I call to mind that next winter I shall be expected—if I am spared—to perform various other duties to good society. The Chasseurs will, perhaps, be as necessary to a man devoted to its interests as the Lancers have been hitherto. Shall I be ignorant of them? Shall I be the one to bring confusion into my set by going to the right when I ought to go to the left, and bowing when I ought to *chassez*? No! I know my duty better. I whistle the Chasseurs, and go through the figures by myself for an hour. I know them well. I can take my place when duty calls. That brings me to lunch,—deviled chop and mushrooms, at the St. Germain. There I have an opportunity to study the manners of the best men. Major Totbury, of the Seventh, sits at the next table, taking *fricandeau* of veal and sherry, followed by quail *sauté aux truffes*; 'pon

honor, most accomplished luncher in New York; eats by science; might be a lesson to anybody. I learn from him, — he doesn't know it; but I honor him, and shall remember his order next time I lunch there."

"Oh, you satirical man!" said Kate, elevating her pretty eyebrows.

"Oh, not at all! I entreat you, don't think so! If a man devoted to good society lunches, he owes it as a duty to good society to lunch well. Declare I respect him for it. Very well, lunch finished, what next? Reflect again. Lunch suggests suppers, — suppers in general, by a natural train of associations, bring up suppers in particular, — evening-party suppers; and then, with the greatest remorse, I find, oh, such a horrible piece of last winter's reminiscence staring me in the face! What do you think I was so wretched as to do to Miss Arabella Dubblezeppher at the Snugfittes' Fancy Dress Ball, in January?"

Miss Jones blushed an apocalypse of all the many remaining proprieties which good society had not subdued to their right proportion. Young gentlemen did so many ardent things beyond squeezing the partners of the bosoms a trifle too tight in the *Deux Pas*, — when the Champagne was not prudently toned by pious education and a bottle of cooling Chablis or Sauterne in the dressing-room! "Kissed Miss Arabella Dubblezeppher" was in her mind, and her mind — untutored soul that she was — being so near her tongue, therefore did Miss Jones blush.

“ Really, I can’t form the slightest idea.”

“ You were not there, — to my great desolation having received Mrs. Tambour’s cards first, as I remember, — and, therefore, Miss Dubblezeppher was the Houri, at least of Snugfittes’ Fancy Dress Paradise. And I — *me voici l’étourdi* ! — spilt a whole table-spoonful of melted chocolate ice on her wings, when I was helping her.”

“ Oh,” said Kate, visibly relieved, and thinking of the dozen or so rich silks hanging in her wardrobe, fraught with similar remembrances in various colors differing from the original, which never more would flutter to the wooing of Dodsworth’s pipes. “ Oh ! is that all ? ”

“ All, my dear Miss Jones ? It is enough, and far too much. Since I first devoted myself to good society I never but once before committed a piece of similar maladroitness. How did Miss Arabella receive it ? Ah ! admirably. In the Dark Ages, in a castle on the Rhine, for example, had I been guilty of such a crime against a lady of rank I should have forfeited my life, — been immediately run through with a sword by one of the gentlemen present, — and, perhaps, should have died feeling that I was but a just sacrifice to the indignation of what then was good society. But Miss Arabella only looked at me with the sweetest smile of the evening (again because Miss Jones was not there), and in answer to my humble apologies, said, —

“ ‘ Oh, I beg you wōnt think of it, Mr. Lilykid ; it is not of the slightest consequence.’ ”

“ I could not stop my ears, however, to the fact that

immediately after she turned to the lady next her, Miss Millefleurs, and made use, in an undertone, of that very disagreeable word from the French, '*Bête!*' Very well, to-day, as I said, that came painfully to my memory; and, 'pon honor, I vowed it should never take place again, or I would doom myself to voluntary exile from the society to which I am devoted."

"O Mr. Lilykid, don't talk so dreadfully! You are the very life of our circle!"

"*Mille ringraziamenti, donna bellissima!* I hope that exile will not be necessary. Don't laugh at me now, really, I beseech you, if I tell you what was my employment for the next hour after that regret awoke in my mind. I happened to remember the means I took when first, at a very early age, I resolved to devote myself to our good society, and trembled to think of doing all the gaucheries which I saw committed by other gentlemen upon ladies' dresses with glasses of Champagne and plates of cream and salad and cups of coffee. I returned to my quiet lodgings. I locked myself into the privacy of my apartments. I took all the chairs and placed them in a row with intervals of a foot or two between. Then, with a saucer full of water in each hand, I practised vaulting over them, one after another, until I succeeded in accomplishing it without spilling a drop. This morning my success was admirable; at the end of an hour I was able to take one, two, or five at a spring without losing a single globule from the saucers. It is arduous, I know; it requires resolu-



tion, patience, perseverance, but a man devoted to good society must, in conscience, have all these. I shall do it daily for some time, and I shall be abundantly repaid, my dear Miss Jones, if next winter I see the fruits of my labor in not offending against society as I did at Mrs. Snugfitte's."

"How few gentlemen ever think of us ladies and our comfort as you do, Mr. Lilykid! Let me return you my thanks on behalf of our whole sex! Do you know that at that very party at Mrs. Tambour's, which you spoke of, I had such a love of a rose-colored brocade, with point lace Bertha à l'*Imperatrice*, utterly ruined by a plateful of oysters spilled right into my lap? And such a curious coincidence! I made the very same remark as Miss Dubblezeppher to the lady next me! Oh, that lovely brocade! it was *too* bad!"

"And I never saw you in it! It would have ravished me! You are so beautiful in rose color,—pardon me! Rose color is so beautiful on *you*! Have another one next winter, and dub me with your *bouquetière* its guardian chevalier. I'll hover around it! It shall attract me as the flower does the bee! I shall watch over it as the angel guards the moss-rose till it blossoms! And Jove! I'll call out the man that desecrates it with a particle of anything to eat or drink!"

"Ah, faithful knight! you deserve worthier occupation for your bravery and your vigilance than one poor maiden's party dress."

"Not at all. The old knights, we hear, devoted them-

selves to the *redress* of fair ladies, — I will devote myself to the *dress* of one; he, he, he, he! only a difference of two letters in favor of brevity. And if the true Queen Rose shall smile upon her chevalier from above the false rose, which shows her beauty better, the happy man will then only feel that he has a worthier commission, and will dare to look up and ask to be dubbed again *her* knight.”

As he said this, Mr. Lilykid bowed reverently to the lady, whom he had been gradually drawing nearer as he waxed eloquent, and taking her fair, soft hand in his straw-colored Jouvin, pressed its rosy finger-tips to his mustache.

Irresistible sweet tingling that shot through Kate's young form from those electric points! What rare, delicate politeness! what an original grace has such a demonstration as this to the heart of a young American maiden, though the women of the Continent take it as such a matter of fact, receiving it as the most formal compliment fifty times a day! This Mr. Lilykid was such an unusually charming man!

Mr. Lilykid drew nearer. He still held the hand with which he had been so rapturous in his own; it fluttered like a little white mouse that is very much frightened; and Mr. Lilykid pressed it tighter to keep it calm. Mr. Lilykid laid his glove upon his watch-pocket, and exhibited symptoms of getting down upon one knee, — which light-infantry movement, thank Jove and the Brooks Brothers, was much facilitated by the roomy



cut of pantaloons then fashionable. The trembling extended from Kate's hand to her whole little frame; she blushed again, and the rosy sky of her face disputed possession with the down-dropped twilight of her eyes; she heard the clock and her own heart tick audibly.

"Come right along; they're in here, and *he'll* be so glad to see you. Come along, papa!"

Heavens! It was that horrid Augustus right at the door. Mr. Lilykid's symptoms took a turn; he released the little hand; he returned to a position which did not bring in play the peculiar advantages of the peg-top. And just in time; for the door opened, and lo! a stout, good-humored man, with an abundance of whiskers, and a jolly, play-ferocious style of countenance, like a Lambro converted to the domestic virtues, loomed up through the opening, preceded by the *enfant terrible* tugging at his right little finger.

"Come right along, papa. They'll be so glad to see you. They're both in here. Come right along!"

"Mr. Lilykid, how d'ye do, sir? Hope I see you well. Pleasant weather we're having."

"Aw! yes, de-cidedly! How de-do, Mr. Jones. We were just speaking of you a moment ago; quite opportune, — he, he, he!"

Mr. Jones, according to his cheerful domestic custom, kissed Kate affectionately, not having seen her since breakfast, perhaps not *at* breakfast, as he went downtown early; stripped off his immense Raglan, — like the sun coming out of a cloud, or a gigantic orange-peeling

itself, for the purpose of feeling nice and easy, — gave it to Augustus, who staggered out into the entry in entire eclipse under it, and hung it up on the highest peg he could reach, and then sat down in the most good-natured manner to be the gentleman of whom John Crapeau says, —

“Deux, c'est la compagnie — *trois*, c'est une foule.”

If I should record the conversation it would not assist the progress of this story. How could it assist the progress of anything to bring together three people, two of whom suppose Panama to be a manufactory for large durable hats, and the remaining one of whom tells said two that Panama has gone up to 117, as if it were a piece of information calculated to excite the liveliest emotions of pleasure; but left them ignorant whether Panama had floated to that degree of latitude, now numbered so many souls of population, or had risen on its hats to that shameful price in specie? How could it assist the progress of anything to bring together two people from one world and one from another, sympathizing with and contiguous to each other about as nearly as the Earth and Le Verrier's last-discovered planet, unless, perhaps, they wished information; and who wants *that*, in good society?

So that the only progress which *was* assisted was Mr. Lilykid to the front-door. With another bow, — this time from the fifth figure of the Lancers, where the

partners meet, the music lulls, and the hands linger, — Miss Jones stood in the parlor entrance, and said, —

“Good-afternoon.”

Mr. Lilykid had the parlor-door between himself and the intruder from the broker’s world. Once out of eclipse from that gross body, he became ardent again. A second time he pressed the little trembling hand to his lips, and murmured, —

“You asked what I could do to keep New York from seeming dull, and yet *you* will be here for nearly a week longer ! My morning was spent in duty ; my afternoon has been, — oh, *such* a reward ! *Al rivedersi !*”

And, accompanied by Kate, the broker ascended to the blissful domestic regions, where his wife was telling Scripture stories to little Augustus, who sat, listening intently, in her lap. The history of Joseph, the good boy who let himself be put in the closet rather than do anything naughty, was interrupted by Kate’s enthusiasm on the subject of that delightful man, Mr. Lilykid, — much to the little brother’s disgust, who wanted to know whether the sacred character kicked, and how long he stayed before they opened the door ; and finally ended by muttering, with his thumb in his mouth, —

“I wish Spindle-shanks could be locked up where Joseph was. You’re always plaguing me. It’s *mean*, — that’s what it is !”

“I wonder,” said Mr. Jones, in an absent-minded manner, “who this Mr. Lilykid is ?”

“He’s a most charming man !” answered Kate.

“He’s a big monkey!” said the pleasant child. And the ringing of the dinner-bell prevented any arrival at a compromise between these slightly differing opinions.

## II.

## A BOY TOO LITTLE.

THE next morning, at nine o'clock, Mr. Jones — having finished his omelet, rolls, and coffee, kissed his wife and daughter, and entered his Raglan like a brave man investing a small town all by himself—stood on his front-door steps waiting for a stage. A ruddy glow suffused his wholesome, energetic face; the morning was cheerful and warm all around him; the fine stone pavement, everywhere fresh from its morning libation at the hands of hose-holding footmen of opulent families; the air was clear, and all the purer for being mingled with pleasant suspicions of Liverpool coal smoke; instead of the morning birds which warbled far up in country woods, the stronger-voiced, but none less sweet, melodious sweeps poured their matin lay along the street as far as ear could hear, echoed back by portly free-stone fronts that, in lieu of hills and crags, stood bathed in the golden flush of the early sun-glory. Now and then a person with Hebrew features trudged by, with a narrow slat-box strapped upon his back, uttering a single mournful dove-note, which might be variously construed as meaning that, by his aid, there

could be "glass put in," or that he carried some choice comestible called "glass-pudding," and pleasantly toning with this pensive cry the joyous music of the morning. All was calculated to inspire a man who had just had his breakfast with the most benevolent emotions. Such city mornings confirm cockneyism. I do not wonder that it is hard for gentlemen to get out of town, when there is such an air of civilization and nature mingled before his very face, — that birds and rivulets and dewy meads seem mere fanciful superfluities of life, — and the country means littler rooms, damper sheets, vulgarer people, and coarser fare than he has at home. When the country means Potter County, Pennsylvania, or White Lake, in Sullivan, a deer coming down the runway before the mouthing dogs, and yourself lying at the bottom with a trusty rifle; when it means a yacht on the Hudson, off Fire Island, or on the waters around Cape Cod; when it means John Brown's Tract, or the Adirondacks, or the Green Mountains, with one of Crook's best rods, two spare limber tips, a book of flies, and, better yet (with an apology to the shade of Herbert), a tin box with cullender lid full of active ground-worms, — then the country is something to be sighed for, set store by, and travelled toward, *via* the very first lumber-wagon that can be obtained at the wildest point of tangency which Man's railroads make with Heaven's woods. But between New York and any country which means something short of these, there is no choice worth a toss-up, — except in favor of Gotham. And, alas ! who

can get to these with a fashionable family? Who can persuade his wife and daughters to camp out with him? Nobody, — since the old Hebrew times, when, with all their wives and their little ones, Israel's gentlemen bade adieu to the brick of the city, and went out for a day's merry-making that stretched through a season of forty years.

By this time the stage is within a block of Mr. Jones's curb. He is getting ready to point his finger at it when the door opens behind him, and Master Augustus — just risen, red and triumphant, from his morning bed of martyrdom, the bath-tub, his morning crown of martyrdom, the comb — leaps out and grasps him by the skirts.

“Where are you going, my dear papa?”

With a heart mellowed by the golden suffusion of the morning, the immense Raglan clasped its little son in its arms; and the good-humored, rosy mouth of the broker above exclaimed, with a hurried kiss on little Mischief's Spitzenberg cheeks, —

“*I am going to make bread for my dear little boy!* Whist! Hello, stage!”

And Mr. Jones the next moment was climbing into the writhing mass of morning-paper-reading business-men who, through much tribulation to ribs and toes, were jolting down-town.

“Going to make bread for his dear little boy?” Master Augustus stood on the door-step until the stage went out of sight around the St. Germain, pondering



these paternal words. In spite of what Mr. W. Cowper has seen fit to remark in derogation of

“The child who knows no better  
Than to interpret by the letter  
The story of a Cock and Bull,”

I must stick up for the opinion that childhood is an age of literal interpretation. Cream-tarts, at seven years old, mean nothing more nor less than cream-tarts, — just so much flour, sugar, vanilla, and whip, — and not an allegory of any kind whatsoever. So that the more Master Augustus reflected, the more did the image suggest itself to him of the burly, fatherly figure, denuded of the Raglan, standing — with sleeves rolled up, a white smirch on each cheek, and whiskers well powdered — over a gigantic bread-trough, kneading with pugilistic earnestness a glutinous mass of the veritable staff of life for the beloved family. On little Mischief’s mind the first idea of what his father did down-town was now dawning. He made bread for his little boy.

Augustus shut the door and went into the house. A greater antipathy than usual to words of three syllables came over him: he threw the spelling-book under the bed; yet there was a restless craving in his soul which was not satisfied by nine-pins, and the young voluptuary found only an aching void in his box of builders’-blocks. He had caught a glimpse of more elevated happiness than was ever dreamed of before, and that portion of



the world which had hitherto satisfied him was now hollow and unreal.

He descended to the kitchen. He marched up to his former terror, the cook, a fierce Welshwoman, whose habitual aspect toward a fiery range had given her cheeks a permanent rouge, sanguinary to look upon; and who had, at an early period of her engagement with the family, relieved herself of Master Augustus's onerous acquaintance by informing him that the reason of her leaving her last place was the dissatisfaction of the lady at having her bad little boy chopped up into a hash one day. But, emboldened by the consciousness of a high aim, Master Augustus advanced three steps into this formidable person's domain, and in a meek but firm voice requested to be allowed to make bread. This praiseworthy demand being met by no more encouraging reciprocation than the frenzied charge upon him of the red-faced woman with a large rolling-pin, the boy retreated discomfited, and sought his mother in the sitting-room.

"Mamma," said he, eagerly, "don't you want me to be like papa?"

"Yes, my son. If you grow up and become such a man as he is I shall be very happy."

"Well, I want to be like him, too. He's gone downtown to make bread for his little boy; and that nasty cook wont let me do it in the kitchen. Can I do it up here?"

Mrs. Jones laughed. But she had an inventive

genius, and was pleased with any direction which Augustus's inquiries took, diverging from that broad road so much dreaded of mothers, — mischief. So, in a few moments she improvised a baker's apparatus for her son, giving him an old valise for his kneading-trough, two or three pillows for dough, an empty sand-box for a dredger, and a couple of unoccupied shelves in a clothes-press for his oven. Seeing him sedately arrayed for work, with one of her white aprons pinned around his neck, and his little blouse-sleeves tucked up to his shoulders, she returned to her writing-desk, secure, as she thought, of at least ten minutes' undisturbed attention to the letter she was busy with.

Master Augustus had worked away at his trade with such laudable assiduity as would have raised him to the side of Ephraim Treadwell, — had made a dozen batches of pillow-bread and baked them, and made them over and baked them again, when he began to feel that something was wanting to his happiness. There was a lack of verisimilitude about pillows, — they did not brown nicely, — and he felt he was *playing* bake after all. Still he was a good boy, and did not trouble his mother with requests for any new suggestions.

In fact, Augustus was so quiet that, after the quarter of an hour which Mrs. Jones had counted on had flown by, — and another quarter after that, — she looked up from her writing-desk, of her own accord, to see what miracle had caused this unparalleled peacefulness. To her surprise Augustus was gone. The last batch lay in

the valise unkneaded, the sand-box dredger was on the floor, her white apron hung on the back of the chair, and baking-day was evidently over. The mother went to the top of the stairs and called, "Augustus ! Augustus !" No answer was returned. She looked down at the hat-stand, — the little wide-awake, like the Panjandrum "with the little round button at the top," was not on any of the pegs. Perhaps the child was on the front balcony, engaged in his favorite amusement of letting miners down a shaft, — performed with two cats, a basket, a piece of string, and the front area. She looked out of the window, — no Augustus visible. And then the thought struck her that the naughty little boy had gone out to play in the street with other naughty little boys, contrary to her express command, and to the manifest violation of the fifth commandment and his clean trousers. His having stolen away so quietly from the sitting-room certainly looked like it. Mrs. Jones rang the bell, and Johnson appeared.

"Go out," said his mistress, "and look up and down the street for Master Augustus. When you find him say that I want to see him directly."

Johnson obeyed; and Mrs. Jones sat down at her writing-desk again, with a sad maternal sigh.

She had finished and was sealing another letter when Johnson knocked again at the sitting-room door.

"Come in ! Well, have you only just found Master Augustus ?"

"No, mistress; hi 'aven't honly just found 'im; hi

honly just 'aven't found 'im hat all, ma'am. Hi've been hup hand down street hin hevery direction, hand looked heverywhere with hall my heyes, hand hi've hasked heverybody hif nobody 'aint seen nothink of no 'such young gentleman nowheres, and nobody 'aint. Hif there vos somebody with a bell 'ere has there his in the hold country, somethink might be done, but " —

Here, at the end of the catalogue of familiar means, Johnson, like most routine-trained Englishmen, came to a dead halt, invention being in its embryo stages with him; and at the same moment Mrs. Jones's heart stopped also, and the blood forsook her face.

"O Johnson! You don't mean to say you think Master Augustus is *lost*!"

"Hi can't say ma'am. 'E might be; then 'e mightn't. Children his different: sometimes they his; sometimes they hisn't. Shall I call the perlice, ma'am?"

"The perlice" — which, to be nationally bigoted again, is the British sovereign remedy and veritable Morrison's pill for every social distress, from the hissing of a Puseyite intoner down to the settlement of canine difference of opinion in an alley — did not strike Mrs. Jones favorably. She did not like to appear arresting the poor little fellow, — which was the only use she knew for those estimable citizens in blue, led to victory by Mr. Pillsbury. She had the idea that it would make him feel like a rascal, which she eccentrically considered the front-door to being one. So she asked, —

"Is Miss Jones in, do you know, Johnson?"

"No, ma'am; she went out 'arf 'n 'our ago, ma'am."

"Ah!" said Mrs. Jones; "very likely Master Augustus may have persuaded her to take him with her. Nothing more for the present, Johnson; only wait in the kitchen, — don't go out; I may ring for you again."

Mrs. Jones knew she was deceiving herself. It was *not* very likely that any amount of persuasion from the lips of the most honey-mouthed orator could have induced Kate to take Master Augustus down-town with her under the most favorable circumstances of resplendent bib, tucker, and behavior; and nothing short of an Arabian Nights' imagination could have pictured that event taking place under the conditions of the play-day suit and style of manners in which he had been invested when his mother last saw him. Still, all that was most motherly in the mother clung to the hypothesis as the sole alternative to wringing of hands, utter dying down of heart, and that dreadful dissyllable in a city's vocabulary, — "*Child Lost!*"

Probably Kate would be at home in an hour or two. Within that time Augustus might return of his own accord; at the end of it Kate might bring him back. The mother would wait an hour longer before she let herself be alarmed. So she said. Yet how could she keep her promise? She resumed her seat to write another letter. She set the "New York" down mechanically at the top of the page; and before the date

could follow it, her mind was wandering through painful, misty mazes of speculation, her ear was listening to every roll of wheels or ring of footsteps in the street. Then her eye grew faithless to the work before her: it was drawn by a resistless magnetism to the deserted bread-tray: it was fixed there; and a cruel, motionless fog appeared to rise before it, out of which sometimes the child's image peered for a moment, kneading away quietly at the batch of pillows; and then, in its place, the dreadful absence of the child seemed taking a visible shape in the question, "Will he ever stand there again?" She shut her desk, walked restlessly across the room, opened a closet-door as if he might be hidden *there*,— the little Mischief! — then came back to the window, lifted the sash and peered long-sightedly up and down the street, with a wistful hope of being surprised by his far-off voice or figure. Then she sat down again, resolutely saying to herself, "I will *not* be alarmed!" The very earnestness of the resolution alarmed her all the more. She left her room, mounted to the garret, searched its crannies, descended to the basement and the cellar, with all the servants following her, and carrying out their peculiar ideas of being helpful by holding candles where there was plenty of light, and saying, "Oh dear!" and "Bless my soul!" like responses in a service. She sought behind barrels and boxes and bins for the boy who was not there. Then the back-yard was ransacked, as if it had been a very Titantic labyrinth, instead of a small, frank-faced open space, without



a hole where an errant cat could hide itself; then every room and closet in the first and second stories was invaded, to its very wainscot crevices. And thus the mother spent the hour in which she would not be alarmed until Kate got home.

At last that young lady came back. She had been to Stewart's and Thompson's. I write that last word with a tear trickling from my nib tributary to departed worth. Thompson's, the extinct but not forgotten! And of course Augustus had not been with her. She calmed her mother, assured her that it was only another of that boy's pranks, and, without manifesting a heartless *insouciance*, still took his absence so coolly, and was so sure that he would be back presently, that Mrs. Jones began to distrust her own fears, and, for a time, was composed and hopeful.

Let us see what has befallen the little brother. Growing dissatisfied with his pillow-bread, this young baker became irresistibly fascinated with the idea of going to see how his father made it. Watching his opportunity, when his mother was most absorbed in her letter, he slipped out of the sitting-room, downstairs, out of the house. Almost all the way to the St. Germain he ran or skipped as fast as his little feet could carry him. He took this direction because it was that which he saw the paternal broker follow every morning,—this gait, because, as I have noticed, it seems to jolt the conscience and keep it from crying "Stop!"—at least in little boys running away,—with whom that organ bears the

proportion to the specimens taken from the mature individual of 10 : 1. Perhaps even this little brother may grow up, under kindly fostering influences, to be a brisk Bear-Papa, making time sales of Michigan Southern, 600 shares more than there can be in any possible market, seller 30 days, and a very amiable man in his family and the church of which he's a pew-holder.

When Augustus came to the St. Germain, he stopped for a moment and looked up toward Worth's monument, then down toward the steeple of Grace. For a moment he felt inclined to turn in the direction of the former,—it was mightily like a big granite chimney of some uncouth shop under ground; but just then one of the stages which his papa patronized came around the corner and took its way down-town. This settled him, and he joined the great tide that sets to the bottom of the island. He was a sturdy little boy, and walking did not easily tire him. After several alarms of voices calling behind him, which his fancy, always assisted by the organ we have before mentioned, kept shaping into "Augustus, come back!" or something of the same reproachful import;—after numerous distant visions of black whiskers and big Raglans of the paternal cut, but sadly disappointing him as they drew nearer; after sundry hustlings from ill-humored urchins, hurrying men, spacious lounging ladies, and busy workmen whose white overalls suggested to him the supposed trade of his father and fired anew his young ambition,—he reached the lower end of Union Square. Here he



made a natural mistake, — followed the straight line, and thus losing the Broadway trail, kept on down University place. In the quiet of that street he first saw people disengaged enough, as he thought, to answer questions. A rosy-cheeked servant-maid was on her knees at the door of one of the houses, diversifying her labor at scrubbing the freestone steps with occasional remarks of an animated character to a person who was shooting coal through the sidewalk and letting the dust scatter to counteract her soap.

“Do you know where Mr. Jones lives?”

The maid stopped scrubbing and leaned upon her brush; likewise the coal-heaver, putting his shovel in rest, and propping himself as deliberately on its handle as if he had selected that attitude for the day, and both of them surveyed the little estray from head to foot.

“What do you want of Jones, sonny?” finally spoke the man of coal.

“He aint Jones! he’s *Mister* Jones; he’s my father. And I aint sonny; I wish you wouldn’t call me it. I’m Mr. Jones’s little boy, and I want to find him. Say now! do you know where he is?”

“What does he do?” said the maid, in a brisk manner, and fixing her black eyes resolutely on the child as if he would like to deceive her if he dared, but she wouldn’t have any of it. “What does he do, now? does he take in washing?”

“Washing!” ejaculated Augustus, with a smile of supreme scorn. “We’ve got a girl like you who does

our washing; I guess *he don't* do that ! He does something an awful lot better than that, — and I'm going to see him and ask if I can't do it, too."

"What is it he does do, then ?" said the coalman, and both he and the maid regarded the child with increased curiosity, mingled with somewhat of respect.

Master Augustus drew himself up to his full height of three and a half feet, and replied, in a dignified manner, —

"He makes bread; that's what Mr. Jones does !"

"Oh," said the coalman, visibly relieved from the strain on his bump of reverence, "he makes bread, does he ?" And simultaneously both he and the maid broke into a loud laugh very disagreeable to Master Augustus, and uttered the words "Jones the baker," as if it were the richest joke of the season.

"He don't put no alum nor sody into his bread, does he, sonny ?" suggested the coalman, pleasantly. "He, he, he, he !" said the housemaid. To all of which Master Augustus replied, sullenly, "None of your business !" and continued on his unassisted journey down the street. For a long time his wounded pride prevented him from asking any further questions. He passed the Parade Ground, and University place was University place no more, but Wooster street, — a thoroughfare unlike anything he had ever seen before, and growing stranger and stranger with every step. Smells intensified, and his childish nose waxed more and more *retroussé* as it grew acquainted with adjacent stables and cabbage nearly as

old as himself. He had seen dirty little boys before, and played with them, to the utter horror of his sister and her renunciation of his acquaintance till he was new scrubbed and clothed. He had even wished he could be like them in their emancipation from soap and combs; but he had never seen *such* dirty little boys as he met now, and he was cured of all pining after their inheritance. In the country, in summer, he had loved pigs, — had, on one occasion, captured and brought a very little one into the parlor; but his heart went not out to *these* pigs, — the pigs of Wooster street, — foul, dissipated beasts, with blear, besotted eyes, who ever and anon issued from yards where they seemed to have been getting intoxicated for the last twenty-four hours on fermented potato-peelings, and staggered in a half-vicious, half-imbecile manner toward the gutter, attempting to force a passage on the way between the little legs of Mr. Jones's littleboy. There were truculent, cowardly dogs that ran off a little way with a snarl and then turned to see if there wasn't a chance of getting a nab at his plump little calves before they betook themselves utterly into the dirty, open entries of their owners; there were women with gin-reddened eyes pressing dirty torn shirts on boards behind broken windows, who seemed to be considering the question of throwing their irons at him; and a one-eyed man, who sat on the rickety steps of an old crow's-nesty, mouldy, tumble-down tenement house, smoking a black pipe, two inches short, looked so remarkably like the ogre in one of his picture-books that

Master Augustus dodged around him into the middle of the street, and when he cried after him in a hoarse voice, "Where'er ye goin', bub?" took to his heels and ran, with his heart beating like a baby trip-hammer, for at least two blocks before he dared to stop and look around.

What with fright and the natural emptiness of interior which periodically attacks the species at an age when the affinity for pie and bread-and-butter is still dominant, Master Augustus was now reasonably enough in somewhat low spirits. Add to these influences the fact that he was now doing the longest distance in the shortest time that he had ever performed in his life, and we can excuse him for feeling the bricks move up to meet his feet as he went — for wanting to sit down somewhere and take something solid. Still he did not give way to tears. The idea of New York in all its wild, labyrinthic bigness had not yet broken upon his mind, and he consoled himself by believing that his father must be very near, and that that bread-making individual would doubtless, like the parent of the other prodigal son, "have bread enough and to spare," with very likely a cream-tart or two to compensate for the absence of butter. Moreover, he was a child of sturdy pluck, without much water that he ever cared to throw away except that which he had to be washed in; and when his heart billowed up towards his eyes, the grand notion of seeing how his father made bread, and learning to do it himself, choked the refractory organ down, and cheered on his tired feet.

But at last he must rest. A hospitable-looking doorstep, with no Wooster street pigs, adjacent stables, cross dogs, or children with dirt on their faces of more than three days' antiquity, allured him, and he sat down. A good, motherly-looking Irish woman saw him from the window, opened it, and said, compassionately, —

“An' where is it ye're sthraying, me poor little bye?”

Augustus took courage and answered that he was going to look for his father.

“An' who's that, thin?” continued his kind interlocutor.

“His name is Mr. Jones — and — and” — Augustus hesitated, remembering the coalman's impudent disregard for the profession; but the affectionate, interested, face, in its white frill cap, won his confidence.

“And he makes bread, that's what Mister Jones does.”

“An what's his first name' darlint? There's a dale of Joneses hereabouts, and some of thim has a way of bein' called John, — faith, most of thim, indade; is your father John Jones?”

“No ma'am, his name's Augustus, and I'm called after him; and I'm going to see him make bread, and to learn how myself. And if you'll tell me where he is, — oh, I'll be so much obliged to you!”

“Poor little darlint; and are ye a great way from home, sure? Ye're a very dacent little gintleman, and it aint from these parts ye are, I'll go bail.”

“I guess I am a good way from home. I came

through an awful lot of streets; but I must be pretty near papa now, and when I find him, oh, Jiminy ! wont it be jolly though !”

As his heart warmed towards the good woman, Master Augustus became more and more at ease and inspirited to a degree which quite made him forget his hunger and fatigue. It did not have that effect, however, upon the kind soul who talked to him. She saw the dinnerless look in his eye, and asked him to come in for a little while, — an invitation which he willingly accepted. Then she brought out the “cold pork and praties,” and the hard, sweet home-made loaf which a good woman will always make good, and which everybody not utterly demented would rather have than the best of baker’s bread, and Master Augustus made a kingly meal. This over, he thanked the kind woman, and, in spite of her utmost persuasions, started anew in search of his father.

It would take too long to trace through all his wanderings this poor little journeyman baker, — mentioning every street that successively and progressively he got more and more lost in. It is enough to say that twilight came on and found him in that dreary kennel known as Thomas street. Broadway, with all its splendor and its publicity, is close at hand; Thomas street, with its filth and its secret dens, where all sorts of corruption of soul and body lurk and fester, in spite of its magnificent neighborhood to the king of streets, is as grim and pestilential as any alley or morass miles away. I



believe its very nearness to Broadway makes it worse : it is a sort of gutter just over the fence of Splendor's and Decency's back-yard,—a sort of rubbish-heap, where Christian Respectability throws all its outcast parings of Humanity that are too foul to be beheld in front and in daylight. I have seen such beautiful women and children, nevertheless, in Thomas street, looking out of black, filthy entries ; the boards of the threshold rotten under their feet, the dews of corruption trickling down on them from the slimy eaves above, as in a charnel-house, and they themselves having such a look of fierce despair on lips and foreheads which a gallant may once have kissed reverently, passionately ! What strange, wonderful jewels, thrown out of their setting to the swine for one small flaw, sometimes get cast into Respectability's rubbish-heap ! When I have gone from Broadway, where I have seen beautiful women walking or riding in glory, into Thomas street, where I have seen those other beautiful ones, and have thought my thoughts about Thomas street and its suggestions, it has become the hatefulest street in all New York to me.

As I said, in this horrible street poor Augustus found himself at nightfall, with his little feet a couple of the sorest burning blisters, his whole body exhausted by fatigue and the recurrence of hunger, his heart sunk to zero, and his mind a perfect chaos of bewilderment. He had asked questions about " Mr. Jones who made bread " of so many men, women, and children, within the last two hours, and in such a broken-hearted carelessness as

to whether the answer were impudent or not, and had received so much varied information upon the subject of different members of the Jones family, that he began to feel himself going crazy in a great wilderness of Joneses, in which every separate tree, as in a vast forest, is like every other, yet different also, and none of them familiar, homelike, or in any way reliable as a guide. If he had been older and metaphysical, the poor child would have described himself as losing his identity. In this horrible Thomas street, among the huddled negresses and white women painted and blowsy, — the hustling, drunken white men and strapping buck-negroes, — the vicious, shrieking children, the universal array of horrible sights and sounds, animate and inanimate, in this horrible Thomas street, — Augustus came to a stand-still, and for the first time long-menacing despair now ascended the throne. Tears of fear, contrition, bodily distress began to flow without measure. He thought of the mother whom he had left to go after his father, and his tears became still bitterer. As he realized the agony she must be in, and the impossibility of his ever finding his way back to her over the great distance he had come, the *bigness* of New York, the cruel, hopeless *bigness*, for the first time in life broke upon him, and he sat down in abject misery on the sidewalk as any dirtiest of the little boys in Thomas street would have done. No longer did he hope to find his father; he knew that good man was at home hours ago, sharing the family distraction; but still to every ruder or kinder soul that questioned



him as he sat with his feet in the gutter, weeping, he replied, mechanically, —

“My papa is Mr. Jones, and he makes bread.”

We leave the poor child to the tender mercies of Thomas street, while we return to the distressed household who are mourning for him.

Gradually even Kate became alarmed when an hour had elapsed after her return from down-town and no signs were visible of Augustus. She accordingly advised her mother to adopt the following plan, and helped her carry it out: Johnson was to take a certain list of their acquaintance, she and her mother a certain other, and they were to call and inquire if anything had been seen, at the several houses, of the little brother. This idea was accomplished, but, of course, with no success.

Kate then thought she had better become hysterical; but upon her mother's representing to her how much more useful she could be by retaining her self-possession, and how very much she would be in the way if she didn't, the young lady denied herself the pleasure, and came out in such character, — such admirably womanly strength and helpfulness, — that her mother was perfectly astonished, and couldn't sufficiently reverence her never before appreciated daughter.

The next thing they did was to dispatch Johnson in a carriage for Mr. Jones; and then Kate sat down on a sofa, and laid her mother's head upon her breast.

“Darling, darling mother!” said the young girl,

“perhaps this trouble is only to punish me for having been so often unkind to little Augustus, and to teach me that I ought to conquer my selfish heart, and aid you a great deal more faithfully in taking care of him. I *will* learn the lesson; and then brother will be brought back to us, and we shall be a much happier, more loving family than we have ever been before. Don’t despair, darling; the Lord will not take the dear child away from us, I am sure, if I try to profit by this trouble.”

Such things, and many others as good and noble, did Kate say, in a broken, feverish voice, but with an attempt at being very cheerful,—stroking her mother’s fair, hot forehead, and kissing away the tears of unspeakable distress that kept welling up into her beautiful eyes, while she hurriedly wiped away and hid those that came into her own.

In about an hour—for the carriage had orders to drive as fast as possible—Mr. Jones got home. He had not been in his office, and Johnson had found it necessary to seek him at the Brokers’ Board. He took his darling wife and daughter into the bosom of the vast Raglan, and kissed them again and again with the redoubled tenderness of great trouble, too choked to speak. When, at length, he found words, they came from his heart all wet,—as if they had just struggled ashore, half-drowned, from the great sea within him, and were dripping with the brine that still heaved and shook his great, broad man’s breast.

“Dearest wife,—dearest Kate! don’t you cry, my

larlings," he uttered in a trembling voice, falsifying his doctrine by his example. "We'll find that precious boy, if we have to take all the detective police into pay, and get broke or die doing it. I'll go directly to the police-station of this precinct, and have the little fellow's description telegraphed all over the city, with offers of a reward of five hundred dollars to the officer that brings him home."

No sooner said than done. The carriage that had brought the father up from Wall street was at the door, kept in waiting. He leaped into it, and was speedily at the elbow of the telegraph operator of the nearest station.

"Don't alarm yourself too much, my dear sir," spoke that person, sympathizingly; "these things are happening every day, and they always turn out well in the end. This little brass jumper at the end of our wire saved forty children last month; and in all the time that the telegraph's been working we've only lost two out of several hundred children who got astray. Three of the forty we saved in April were gone a couple of days,—one, a whole week. He got on a train going up the Hudson River Railroad. Mother went nearly crazy,—not expected to live from day to day; but we found the little youngster, and brought him home safe and sound. Mother recovered in about ten minutes,—then nearly died again for joy. First day she was able to be out, came up here, and wanted me to take a hundred dollars. Much obliged, but rather not. Duty was its

own reward. Then *she* fell to kissing everything,—kissed the machine,—kissed the policeman who brought the boy back,—actually kissed *me* !” And the operator smacked his lips as if the taste of the grateful tribute still lingered; then fell to work,—went click-click-click-click-click-click-click for a few assiduous minutes,—and lo ! every police-station in New York was introduced to Master Augustus Jones, and bent its multiplied energies to the work of finding him.

Wonderful, beneficent, omnipotent telegraph ! What marvel that mothers kiss thee ? And though the graceless, ungrateful tribe of intellectual prigs, and the hair-splitters of the Supreme Court who back them, harass with endless patent cases the silver hairs of our noble, thrice-beloved Morse,—though America leaves to foreign powers the graceful privilege of recompensing the last years of a life of unselfish genius, as fully as the mere money-tribute of a hundred thousand francs can do it,—does not every click of his offspring’s electric tongue that brings home a wandering child throb a sweet note of reward in the great philosopher’s loving heart,—does not the whole nation of thankful mothers bless him and kiss him a thousand times a year ?

Mr. Jones made an arrangement with the telegraph operator that the moment that any news came to the station of the child, or the likelihood of the child, it should be immediately sent to No. — West Twenty-third street; and then went home to do what he could, poor man ! for his broken-hearted wife and only less

broken-hearted daughter. There was no resource left for them but to wait; and waiting, when a child is lost, is the bitterest mode of prolonging misery. To be sure all the resources of the great police system of the great city of New York were concentrated on that one little boy. The original use of the system — rascal-hunting — could not have so brought it to a focus; if Master Augustus had been a noted bank-defaulter, or a swindler of stockholders, he would have had less personal attention to boast of. Everything that could be done was doing for him; and yet, as that father, mother, and sister sat still in their distress, they were full of the keenest self-reproachings, — of a sense of inertness which seemed to them, by a strange paradox, the more unfeeling in proportion as their feelings were more harassed by it.

Hour after hour dragged on, and still no word came from the station. The poor mother began wandering about in a frenzy. From room to room, wherever Augustus had played, she strayed with her eyes full of a dreamy, misty pain. When she came upon some little toy with which he had played, she snatched it up, kissed it passionately, and her tears came pouring in torrents. Standing before a little pastel picture of the child, taken in his fourth year, she grew transfixed, and remained motionless, gazing at it in such an agonized silence that she could hear every beat of her own heart. And then she knelt at the little bureau where his tiny clothes were kept, — drew out, one by one, the manikin suits which her motherly care had proudly embroidered for him, —

examined his small stockings, and, as she saw the places where his little, restless feet had called her needle into play, asked herself, with a fearful sinking of the heart, whether she should ever mend them for him any more; and again the passionate tears blinded her poor eyes.

Kate had thrown herself upon her bed. She could not cry, for her self-reprovings were too stern. She buried her hot face in her pillow, pressed one hand against her aching heart, and with the other ceaselessly pushed away her long dark hair from her forehead, as if it were hated evidence of the pride and accomplice of the selfishness which her bitter mentor now told her had so often done wrong to the poor little lost brother she might never see again.

The father paced all the rooms where his wife wandered, with a stern wretchedness in his once cheerful, buoyant face, hardly ever able to speak a word, and chiding himself when it had been spoken; for it always sounded so cold, so hard to his burthened heart, that it seemed a cruelty rather than a consolation to the suffering woman whom he loved.

At last they all came together at the side of the bed where Kate was lying. The husband and the wife both dropped on their knees, and the strong man poured forth his soul in this one prayer of agony,—

“O God! save our child, and take away all our worldly prosperity if thou wilt!”

Clasping each other's hands the three bowed there in silence, each thinking the continuation of this prayer



which they had no voice to speak. For several minutes they remained there, and then the mother arose.

"My husband," she said, "I shall die of this suspense. Let us go up to the station again."

Johnson once more called a carriage. Father, mother, and daughter got into it; the driver was ordered to hurry to the station-house at his utmost speed. When they reached there they ran up the narrow stairs to the telegraph room with a lightness like that of the strongest, most refreshed feet. As might have been expected, there was no encouragement there for them, except the repeated injunction of the operator not to despair, and his recital to the mother and sister of the statistics in favor of finding lost children, which he had given to the father three hours before.

"We have news of several boys and one girl, already this afternoon," said the operator; "the girl was lost last night, the boys this morning. It takes a good deal longer to find girls than it does boys, because a girl is more helpless when she's astray, — so's more pitied, and often gets taken in somewhere and sheltered, instead of being left for the policeman to bring to the station. That makes it a harder job to find her. You feel bad enough, mum, about your boy, I know; but it's a great deal better than if it was a girl. We'll find him for you any way. Lord bless me! there aint a chance as big as that of his being lost permanently;" and the operator filliped away a piece of string that he had been toying with as he talked, to represent the very small chance indeed.

Then the distressed three returned home again. Six o'clock and dinner-time came, but nobody touched a mouthful. Bearing the agony of suspense as strongly as they were able, they passed the hours of growing darkness till nine o'clock; and then, from sheer exhaustion, the mother and sister of the wanderer were compelled to lie down. The father sat and watched by their bedside, or paced the dreary rooms, whose emptiness of the one absent seemed to make them echo to his tread, "Lost! lost!"

To return to the curb-stone where we left Master Augustus sitting. About ten o'clock there issued from the tenement in Thomas street, just behind him, a young man, whose general appearance was strangely at variance with the surroundings of the place. He wore a black Kossuth hat, neat dark pantaloons, well-polished boots, and a light surtout; for the evening was cool, though toward the end of May. His face was refined, manly, and resolute; his eyes and hair black as jet, and his beard strong, curling, and abundant; and he seemed about twenty-six years old. A squalid woman, very much draggled and torn, lighted him, or perhaps smoked him would be more accurate, to the rotten threshold, with a malodorous, half-penny tallow-candle, that stewed and dripped in its own ruins, like everything else in Thomas street. In a strong Milesian brogue she asked him, as he was passing out, —

"An' what may yer bill be, doethor?"

"Nothing," said the young man, "except to promise



me that if that baby lives, — which I hope it is likely to do now, — you wont get drunk again till it's over teething."

"Houly Mother bless ye, but ye're a dacent gintleman; and may ye niver want a friend in disthress! No more I wont, and that's throe for me: an' if I does it, may the divil" —

"Never mind the devil, — you've had enough to do with him already, Mrs. Murtagh; only remember not to drink."

"Good-night, thin; angels bliss yer sleep, honey!"

"Good-night!"

He was about turning up toward the hospital, when the strange little object on the curb-stone attracted him, and he stopped, bent down, and looked intently at Master Augustus. "It can't be possible, even in Thomas street," soliloquized the young doctor, "that a boy of that age is lying here drunk at this time of the evening." He shook the little fellow gently by the shoulder, and roused him from his sleep against the friendly hydrant, which had been his pillow for the hour and a half past. Augustus awaked and looked at him dreamily, not realizing where he was. The young man immediately saw that he hailed from none of the Thomas street houses.

"What are you doing here, my little fellow? You'll be lost if you stay out so late; you had better go home to your mother; she's frightened about you now, I've no doubt."

Augustus stared in surprise.

"Do you know my mother?"

"No, I don't, my boy."

"How do you know I've got one, then?" asked Augustus, triumphantly, in spite of his sleepiness, and true to his native fondness for always "putting in a clincher."

"I think you look as if you had one. She made that little pair of pantaloons which you've been getting so dirty on the pavement by sitting down and going to sleep here, instead of saying your prayers and climbing into your pretty little crib."

"Crib!" muttered Augustus, scornfully; "I guess I aint a baby! I sleep in a *great big bed*, — all alone by myself. Who are you, anyhow?"

"My name is Doctor Morris; and I'm a good friend to you and your mother, for I'm going to help you to get home. Where do you live? — what's your name?"

"Augustus Jones."

"Where do you live, Augustus?"

"I live at my papa's, — he's Mr. Jones, and he lives up in Twenty-third street."

"Do you know what the number is?"

"No, sir."

"What does your papa do?"

"He makes bread."

"Oh! we'll find him very easily, then. Are you too tired to walk? You must be if you've come with those little legs all the way from home to-day. Let me carry you."

"No, I can walk."

"Well, come along, then. We'll go and get a Directory, and see the number where your papa lives, and then it will be all right in a very short time."

By his kind yet not too patronizing manner, he won Master Augustus's confidence to such a degree that the boy took his hand, and the two went slowly together into West Broadway, talking as they walked.

"Do you like oyster-pie, Augustus?"

They were just then passing a restaurant, and the doctor noticed that the boy looked in eagerly and snuffed its savors with high appreciation.

"I guess I do!" responded Augustus, enthusiastically.

"Well, I am glad to hear that; for I know a great many boys, and all the good boys are very fond of oyster-pie."

"Are they?" said Augustus, delightedly. "Mother says I'm a *very* good boy sometimes."

"Well, then, I'll try you, and see if she's right."

The pair, still clasping hands, went into the shop, and the doctor ordered as large a piece of oyster-pie as a boy of seven could eat; and, when that amount had been ascertained by actual measurement, paid for it, and went out, leading his *protégé*. Master Augustus's confidence in his new friend rose several hundred per cent. He began to be communicative. Speech never flows freely when one is hungry, because the up-train of words is loth to move, knowing, as it does, that the right of way

on that single track, the throat, belongs to a bread-and-butter train down.

"I want to ask you a question."

"Ask me as many as you please, Augustus. I like to show off what I know."

"Well, then, do you *really* kill people?"

"No, indeed. What in the world do you mean by that?"

"You're a doctor, — that's what I mean. I've heard people say, a great many times, that all doctors kill people. There was Jimmy Stilton, — he was a good boy, Kate says, — and I heard her say, too, that the doctor killed him with too much oil and such nasty things. But I guess he'd have died any way, — he was awful good. Now tell me honest, *do* you kill people? I wont tell anybody!"

"No, Augustus, — honor bright! — I don't kill anybody at all, except old Mr. Fever, and cross old Mrs. Stomach-ache that plagues little boys so, and ugly little Miss Cold-in-the-Head, and such naughty people as that. I shoot *them* with pills, and smother them under plasters, and drown 'em in drops; but I don't hurt good people at all."

"Then, by hokey, I'll like you very much indeed, old fellow! I didn't ask you if you killed people because I was afraid of you. I only wanted to see some of the people you killed, and see how they looked, and how you did it. I wish you'd like me."

"So I will, Augustus. I do like you now; and we'll

have many a nice play together, I hope, after I get you home to your mother."

"I've got a sister, too, — she's an *awful* pretty girl: don't you wish you knew her?"

"Yes, indeed, I'd like to know her very much. You'll introduce me to her, wont you?"

"Yes, I will. Her name's Kate. She's got great big eyes, — almost as black as the ones you've got, — and curls, too, — Jiminy, *such* curls! Wont you tell anybody if I'll tell you something?"

"No; I'll keep as still as a mouse about it."

"Well, when I was a little boy, — that's a great while ago, before I was big, like I am now, — she was very nice to me, and never called me bad names, like monkey, and mischief, and plague. And when they used to ask me who was going to be my wife when I got to be a man, I always used to say Kate was going to be it. Wasn't it funny? I guess it was! I didn't know that little boys couldn't marry their sisters, you know. And now there's an awful mean old Spindle-shanks that comes to see Kate, and he thinks I don't know what he is up to; but I do. He wants to have her for his wife; and I hate him like poison. He calls me sonny, and he makes her not like me; and he aint nice at all, like you are. I wish doctors did kill somebody sometimes! Couldn't you kill him, just once, without being caught, so that Kate wont marry him?"

"I'm afraid not. Isn't there any other way of stopping her?"

Augustus did not answer for some time; but walked along, biting his little nails in deep thought. At last he brightened up, and gave the friendly finger he had hold of a violent joyful twitch which nearly dislocated it.

"Yes, sir-ee, there's one way of stopping her without killing old Lilykid! Will you do it? Say, old fellow, will you do it?"

"What's your plan? Let's hear it, Augustus."

"*You go and marry her yourself!* Wont that be nice? You'll be my brother, then; and I'll never plague you when you come to see Kate, and you can have the parlor all to yourself! Say now, wont you? That's a nice old fellow! Say yes. Come now, say yes, wont you?"

Dr. Morris laughed heartily at this ingenuous proposal, then replied, —

"But how do you know I aint married now? And what if *she* shouldn't say yes, too? Then I'd be 'up a tree,' as the boys say."

"I know you aint married; you dont look married. You're so good to me I don't believe you've got any little boy of your own to be good to. And I know she'll say yes." Here Augustus lowered his voice to a tone of reverent piety, most laughably incongruous with his general naughty-boy bearing, and continued: "When I say my prayers I'll ask to have her say yes, and then she's got to, haint she? *That'll fetch her!*"

The doctor, overwhelmed by the strength of the child's mountain-moving, or woman-moving faith (which



misogynists assert to be the same thing), had to lean against an adjacent tree-box until he could sufficiently recover his gravity.

"Very well! you can try it," he replied; "and if I find out you aren't making believe when you say Kate's such a pretty, good girl, — why, perhaps we'll see what we can do to kill Lilykid in a decent sort of a way. But here's the Girard House: let's just step in and look in the Directory to see where your father lives."

"What's that big word?" ejaculated Augustus.

"The *Directory*. It's a big word, and it means a big book that a good man wrote to help people to find out where little boys who get lost ought to be taken home to."

"And did the man know I was lost? And has he written all about it in the book? I think he's awful mean! He aint a good man at all! I'll bet they've got the book in Sunday school, and little Tommy Jenks, who reads all the big books he can get hold of, will find it, and make fun of me! How did they know about me?"

"Oh! it don't tell about *you*; it only tells about your father, so we can find his house and take you to it."

"Oh!" said Master Augustus, once more drawing a long breath, "that's all, heh? Well, you look into it, and read me how my father makes bread."

By this time the doctor had opened the Directory, and was turning it over on the counter of the registry-clerk. He came to the Joneses, and began sailing over

that illimitable sea, with no helm but the Christian name Augustus, and no chart but the general idea that that Augustus was a gentleman who devoted his energies to baking, and spent his leisure in Twenty-third street somewhere.

No such combination of circumstances could be found. There were Joneses enough to erect themselves into a ward, — Augustus Joneses enough to form a primary meeting in that ward, — but bread-making Augustus Joneses, who lived in Twenty-third street, were nowhere visible.

“You’re sure his name is Augustus?” said the doctor, perplexedly.

“Of course it is!” replied the stray youth, with marked emphasis. “If it isn’t, what is it, then?”

There was cogency in that argument. Doctor Morris did not dispute the question further.

“But aren’t you mistaken about his making bread? Isn’t he a tallow-chandler, — or a broker, — or a minister?”

“He *makes bread*, I say, — that’s what my papa does! He told me so this morning when he was going down-town.”

“Well, then, Augustus, I must say I’m puzzled what to do with you, my boy. Your papa’s name is left out of the big book, and I must say *that* is very mean.” The doctor stopped, and thought for a moment. “Well, there’s only one way left. We’ll have to go to the station-house. That’s the place where boys that get lost



have to go when they can't get found in any other way." And, with his young charge, Doctor Morris took as straight a line as possible for the nearest rendezvous of our municipal protectors.

They reached the station, but found some difficulty, for a moment, in getting in, as a crowd of all the un-soaped sight-seers in the neighborhood obstructed the door, with shoulders and elbows in various stages of tatter, from ragged sleeves to no sleeves at all. That pleasant spectacle, an arrest, had just taken place, and its cheap frequency did not seem to derogate in the least from the zest with which it was attended by the congenial spectators. A policeman, like the circus elephant, kept going around "to make a ring," with his billy for a trunk, and prevented the patrons of the show from seeing more than they bargained for. He knew Doctor Morris as a benevolent *habitué* of the lower slums of the ward, nodded to him, and, upon his whispering to him that he had a lost boy in tow, opened a way for him among the throng, and let him into the sanctum of public protection.

Here the object of interest became apparent. A gentleman, dressed in the height of fashion, evidently for a little evening party slightly different from the one to which he here found himself invited, stood between two other gentlemen in blue,—like a bridegroom in charge of his groomsmen, except that they appeared rather more anxious than usual lest their principal should bolt before the ceremony was over. His whiskers and mus-

tache were of the most *recherché* Young England cut; his gloves were as close a fit as if by some triumph of art kid hands had been grafted on a human stock; and his voice was subdued to the most mellifluous accents of the drawing-room, as he gracefully debated the question with his attentive friends. *The question, I say. A fragment of his little address will reveal what it was:—*

“Weally, my fwends, I haint the least doubt in the wo-ah-ld of youah pwopah intentions; but you labah undah an errah of judgment,—that is all. It is a devilish inconvenient thing for a gentleman, having an appointment to meet, to be detained in this way on such an absu-yd cha-a-ge as this ! Weally ! Obtaining funds on false pwetences ! Ha, ha, ha ! Damned amusing, ’pon honah ! I am so unfawtunate as to wesemble the weal man, I suppose. Dooced funny ! Nevah knew I wesembled anybody; if I had, I’d have made every endeavaw to altah my puysonal appeah-ance ! Good joke, —’pon my soul it is !”

“You’ll find it’s something else than a joke before to-morrow morning !” said defender of our *American* interests No. 1, very grimly.

“I’ll be dommed if ye aren’t afther finding it’s a devilish sarious matter !” corroboratorily added defender of our *American* interests No. 2.

“You may pe sure of dat, mit all yer kid kloves and de colt vatch-chain !” still further assisted defender of our *American* interests No. 3.

(All of these defenders, with others of still varying

attainments in the Anglo-Saxon tongue, were selected for the office of policemen, on the ground of their acquaintance with the *American* interests they had in charge. One of them could not speak a word of English. I remember having seen him at a fire, where the sagacity of the municipal authority which selected him became particularly evident, in his being unable to converse with the outsiders, who might otherwise have hampered him in the discharge of his arduous duty.)

"I only ask a few moments' delay," continued the gentlemanly prisoner, with his former graceful composure. "I have sent for one of my friends, who will not hesitate to go with me before the magistrate and become my surety to any amount for appearance to answer to this most ridiculous charge; and I shall then be able to keep my important appointment!"

"What's the nature of the prisoner's accusation?" said the doctor, in an undertone, to the Hibernian defender of American interests.

"Sure and he's an embezzling rascal, that's what he is," answered the defender; "and he's arrested for swindling a poor devil of a bootmaker out of a hundred and fifty dollars. He's got about ten or a dozen names, — now he's 'Lord Devil-knows-who,' with a large property in Ireland, — bad luck to the black mouth that says he never saw the light o' that blessed island! — now he's 'Mr. Pennyroyal Pike,' a rich American from the South, and then again he's 'English Jimmy the Gentleman;' but Hivin knows one name is plenty good enough for

the likes o' him, an' that's Andrew Redding, an' bad enough it is, too, the skoonk ! ”

All this time Augustus, hid behind half a dozen blue coats, the opacity of whose tails caused him the most lively indignation, was tugging to get a look at the object of interest, but with signal unsuccess. Unable to contain himself any longer, he pulled the doctor's finger savagely, and exclaimed, —

“ Lift me up, wont you ? Don't you think a fellow wants to get a squint at him, too, hey ? ”

Doctor Morris good-humoredly obeyed, and elevated the *enfant terrible* by the waistband to a position highly eligible for the squint desired.

“ Jiminy ! ” exclaimed the youth, — all symptoms of ten o'clock and sleep leaving his eyelids, — “ if that isn't the nasty old thing himself ! It's *Spindle-shanks* — that's what it is. How de do, Mr. Lilykid ? ”

The gentlemanly prisoner turned round with a start, but, quick as thought, the doctor dropped the bad boy to his native level; and Mr. Lilykid failed to discover that member of the detective service who had played this ventriloquist trick on him.

“ Hush ! ” said the doctor, whispering sternly into Master Augustus's ear. “ If you don't keep still I wont marry Kate ! Is that the Lilykid you were talking about ? Speak softly ! ”

“ Yes, it is,” said Augustus, half-offended and half-awed by the peremptory manner of his friend.

“ Then don't you open your mouth to anybody about

it till I tell you, or he will run away, and we can't kill him, don't you see? Will you promise me?"

"Yes, if you wont let him get my sister."

"Well, keep your promise, and he shan't have her. Good boys, who like oyster-pie, always keep their word; and I know *you* will."

"Yes, sir," answered the little brother, in a low whisper, feeling confidence restored.

Just at this juncture Mr. Lilykid's friend, very much like him in personal appearance, and answering to the name of Buckingham, appeared, signified his readiness to go bail, and went away with Miss Jones's admirer and the groomsmen in blue, to visit the magistrate.

A quarter of an hour afterward the frantic family in Twenty-third street received the following despatch:—

"*To Augustus Jones, Esq., —*

"A boy has been found, and is now at this station, answering description of this P. M.'s telegraph from you. Says his name is Augustus Jones; but as he firmly asserts, with apparently perfect intelligence, that his father is a baker, we do not wish to hold out any strong hopes of his identity. Come down directly.

"BULROCK, *Telegraph Operator.*"

Within thirty minutes longer, as may well be supposed, Mr. and Mrs. Jones and Kate were at the door of the station-house where their terrible suspense was to be removed, or left to grow worse, to linger forever. So strongly did they realize this fact, that they faltered on the threshold, hesitating to go in.

"The boy is asleep now," said one of the policemen; "he seemed so fagged out that we laid him on a cot, and he was off in no time."

He led the way, as he spoke, into a room furnished with comfortable but plain cot-beds, — where all the sleeping took place that was ever performed in that centre of public vigilance, — and turned on the gas more brightly to let them see the stray. Like a little cat, with his legs curled up against his stomach, and his head on his soft paws, lay the child sleeping. Yes, his hair was the true curly corn-silk! Turn the gas up a little higher! All the three rush around to the side of the bed and turn down the corner of the quilt from his face. It is *he*! It's that darling, darling, naughty little brother!

Had Augustus died from the effect of that rapturous meeting, the policeman would have been able to testify on the inquest that it was murder, for the boy's little ribs cracked audibly. He was smothered in the Raglan, like a performance of "the Babes in the Tower," with one babe scant; his nose was flattened against the bones of Miss Kate's corsage; last of all his mother got him, not to let him go. He was hugged, he was deluged with kisses and tears, he was called several dozen epithets which the wildest system of moral philosophy would have failed to make consistent: an angel, and a little monkey; a darling, a naughty wretch, a beauty, a dear little dirty pig; a wicked, wicked boy to break their heart so; a cherub, and a rascal. All of which



blandishments were equally ravishing to Master Augustus, — aroused as he was out of a sleep of utter exhaustion, — only enough awake to feel a general sentiment of vindictiveness toward the human race, and wondering, like Mr. Pickwick on the occasion of his celebrated one-horse act, whether it was not all “a horrid dream.” When he came to sufficiently realize his position, his first remark was directed to the large Raglan and Whiskers, who stood alternately laughing and crying at the foot of the bed.

“How *do* you make bread, anyhow? *Say!*”

But as the reality of things still further broke upon him, — as he remembered all the mortification and the pain of his weary day’s wandering, and felt what a heavenly thing it was for a poor little lost boy to have a mother’s and father’s and sister’s loving hearts to come to when the dread and the danger were at their highest, — he softened like a little tough snow-ball in April thaws. He wept on one bosom, and laughed on another; he hugged them all passionately as far as his small arms could reach around; he asked forgiveness in choked, inarticulate sobbings, and made innumerable promises, which, if kept, would have put him in the category of those boys who *want*, at least, to be an angel and with the angels stand.

Everything having become ordinarily placid once more, Augustus looked all around him anxiously, and not seeming to find what he wanted, called out in a loud tone, —



"Doctor ! Doctor ! Where are you, you good old fellow ?"

The gentleman sought, with a proper delicacy, had taken himself out of the way when the carriage arrived, and was now talking with some interesting specimen of character he had found among the policemen in the outer room. He never liked to be idle; and he knew that blue uniforms do not cover uniform natures,—human nature being the same, that is to say, the same in no two cases, wherever you find it. Hearing Augustus's voice, he joined the party in the cot-room.

"Here he is !" exclaimed Augustus, triumphantly. "That's the man that knows what a good boy I am, and gave me a big piece of oyster-pie ! Come here, old fellow ! You found me, didn't you ? *That's* my mother, and *that's* my father, and *that's* Kate ! Isn't she an *awful* pretty girl,—just as I said she was ?"

"O Augustus !" exclaimed the young lady, blushing and holding up her finger.

"This is a proud and grateful moment of my life. I'm honored by seeing you, sir !" said the Raglan, with the warm heart inside of it, shaking the doctor's hand warmly inside the privacy of a giant sleeve.

The mother clasped the other hand, and looked the eloquent thanks that mothers know, but on such occasions can seldom speak.

"I might have had a less eccentric introduction, but certainly not a more favorable one," said the doctor, returning all his salutations with a frank smile. "You,

who are so happy, can feel how happy I must be in the accident which connects me with this little fellow's recovery. Indeed, I wish all my patients were recovered as quickly."

The doctor's manner was very manly, self-possessed, and polished; his smile showed a beautiful set of white, regular teeth, and the impression he made upon Miss Jones was altogether favorable. She looked at him with considerable interest while he spoke; and the quick eye of Master Jones did not let this fact go by unobserved.

"Look-a-here, old fellow, I want to whisper to you!"

"No whispering in company you know, Augustus."

"But I *must*, just this *once*!"

"Well," said his mamma, considerately, "just this once, then. I guess we must excuse him, doctor." The doctor bent his ear, and Augustus uttered eagerly:—

"You can do it; she's a-going to like you; mayn't I just pitch into her about old Spindle-shanks just one little *wee* time?"

"No, my dear boy; if you do, you wont be keeping your word, you know. And good boys always do that. Wait till I tell you you may, and then you can. I'll tell you why sometime,—and till then be a little man; stand by your promise. You *will*, wont you?"

"Yes," said Master Augustus, with a deep sigh,—feeling that one of the principal gratifications of life was inscrutably denied him.

"We shall hope to see you at our house whenever you

can run away from your professional duties," uttered the Raglan, ardently.

"You will always be most welcome," said the mother.

And the daughter smiled a bewitching invitation, which was full as cordial as if it had not been silent.

The restored little brother was then lifted into the carriage,—enthusiastic thanks and good-bys repeated to all who had been engaged in the good office of finding the lost sheep,—and the wheels rattled away.

Between the station-house and Twenty-third street Master Augustus had his inquisitiveness on the subject of the parental bread-making relieved; but, to his bitter disappointment, only by finding — as is the case with so many, alas! of our earlier roseate visions — that it was not literal, but figurative.

## III.

## JUST ENOUGH OF A BOY.

GOING into the country for the summer ! There is crash upon the wide surface of the parlor-floors; but it thinks of the kisses it had last winter from glancing kid and satin toes amidst the delirium of Redowas and the spheral sweep of the German, and sighs knowing that for the sweltering months to come it must do Lenten penance for its carnival, — abandoned to dust, and silence, and darkness. The gay fauteuils, the ottomans, the sofas, in monastic shirts of rough Holland, are ready for their summer repentance likewise. Till the house-cleaner, and the upholsterer, and the footman, forerunning the family in October, shall come again to shrive them and unbind their sackcloth, they must sit in the gloom and mourn for the flirtations they have aided and abetted, in corners and behind brocatelle curtains. The piano is a sarcophagus: Sphor and Thalberg, Chopin and Schubert, the whole grand army of Mozart, Bellini, and their operatic brethren, lie silent beneath that coffin-lid of mirror-bright rose-wood, side-by-side with Glover, Foster, and George Christy. They do not crowd each other; but if they did, they could not speak to com-

plain of it, for they are ghosts that cannot answer till they are spoken to, and the cunning fingers that once broke their spell are in a pair of pretty little Lisle-thread travelling gloves toying with a parasol. Miss Kate is all ready to go, and in time, too: a fact which the satirical assert to be of such rare occurrence in a lady's lifetime, that, whenever it does happen, a monument should be raised to commemorate it. Such a monument *is* raised in the present instance, just inside the hall-door. Its pedestal is a Saratoga trunk of a size which could not have existed at the time of Noah, or other families than that gentleman's would have survived the deluge; its shaft gradually rises in successive courses of smaller baggage, and its capital is a hat-box, marked "Miss Kate Jones." It is not quite as high as Worth's monument, but full as handsome, and a great deal more truthful, as Miss Jones *has* been at Twenty-third street, which is inscribed in several places on *her* column, while Mr. Worth, I understand, was *not* at a few of the war-localities engraved on his.

Mr. and Mrs. Jones are lovingly talking over their plans for the summer, as they promenade the hall with their arms around each other's waists: the wife so glad that the husband is able at last to get out of town with her; the husband so proud and pleased to think he has a wife who does not look upon him merely as a money-machine kept going in Wall street to manufacture the basis of her independent summer-pleasures, — who waits for him rather than go anywhere without him.

Master Augustus was wound up last night like an alarm-clock, by the information that they would all start to-morrow. It was, however, impossible to set his striking-hand at any particular hour; consequently he has been going off all day. He was wide awake at three o'clock this morning, insisted upon being dressed at four, took his cap in his hand as soon as he got down stairs, ate breakfast with his gloves on, spent the interim between that and lunch in standing on the steps to see whether the carriage was coming, and passed the remaining time until it actually did come, in requesting exact information, to the very minute, of the time of day, at intervals of a quarter of an hour. It is historical that, for the last three hours of suspense, he did not once sit down; but when he received his little boots, after they had been blacked for the journey the third time that day, he put them on by a Blondin feat of balancing, standing on one foot, and altogether did enough running up and down stairs, in his anxiety to get on, to have carried him to the Highlands of Navesink (the family's destination), had that point been attainable to a pedestrian.

While the family were awaiting the carriage the door-bell rang. Augustus happened to be making a broad jelly of his little nose at that moment against the hall window-pane, and thus being convenient to the door-knob, turned it without waiting for Johnson. To his great delight Dr. Morris greeted his eyes.

"Come in, doctor ! come right in !" cried Augustus;

"we're all a-going away, and I'm so glad to see you I don't know what to do !. Are you going away, too ?"

"No, Augustus. This is the first day I've had any time to come and see you, and now you're going to run away and leave me. Ah ! Mr. and Mrs. Jones, how do do ? Miss Jones, I hope you are well. I'm sorry to be so *malapropos*, yet not exactly either, for otherwise I should have missed you entirely."

"Sit right down, and excuse the plight we're in !" exclaimed the broker, shaking the young man's hand warmly inside of the gigantic dust-coat sleeve that now replaced the Raglan. "Yes, do ! don't think you're detaining us; the carriage wont be here for half an hour yet;" and Mr. Jones handed him one of the penitential chairs.

With Augustus on his knee, Dr. Morris sat conversing with all the family until the carriage came. Then, with most cordial invitation to visit them at the Highlands during the summer, and be their most frequent guest on their return home, they gave him those pleasant, earnest shakes of the hand which leave a grateful memory on the touch, corresponding to that of fresh clover on the sense of odor; and the hearty souls, carrying innumerable little morocco bags, black wicker baskets, satchels, umbrellas, parasols, shawls, books, dusters, together with four *Harper's Magazines* for the current month, that no one might be tantalized by witnessing the perusal of such an interesting periodical when he or she had it not, entered the carriage, and the door was



shut. But just before the driver tightened his reins, Augustus, as if by a sudden premonition, exclaimed, —

“Doctor! wont you tell a fellow where you live? Mamma’s going to teach me to write, and my very first letter will be to *you*!”

Doctor Morris took a card from his pocket-book, and handed it to the little brother through the window. It bore his name and address:—

M’GREGOR MORRIS, M.D.,

Physician and Surgeon.

NEW YORK HOSPITAL, 10 P. M.—7 A. M.

OFFICE AT OTHER HOURS, No. —, CLINTON PLACE.

It was no doubt a premonition which induced Augustus to obtain this, — a very remarkable and providential one also, as afterward appears in the course of this narrative. He put it into the pocket of his little summer-cloth jacket; the doctor hailed a stage going down, and the carriage, with its joyful Joneses, set off at cheerful speed for the foot of Robinson street.

It reached the slip about twenty minutes before the good little steamer *Highland Light* was to start. Mr. Jones took his wife and children to the promenade deck; found stools for them, and left them near the pilot-house, while he returned to the wharf to attend to the little matter of baggage that had come down in a cart behind the carriage. By the time that it was all on board the

second bell began to ring, and Mr. Jones ascended once more to rest from his labors in the family bosom. At least so he congratulated himself, for he had cast his eye upon one particular stool when he went down, and hoped that it would not be taken before he got back.

He was disappointed. His sweet Kate was already in the meshes of an apparently most charming conversation, the amiable ensnarer being none else than Mr. Lilykid. Close by them his wife sat where he had left her, fully occupied with diverting the vindictive attention of Master Augustus from the mutually agreeable pair. With the maternal assistance that youth was vigorously combating the fiery temptation to "out with it, and call him Spindle-shanks to his face."

"Mr. Lilykid, father," said Kate, looking at the gentleman's hands as if she expected them to shake one another. This did not happen, however, the father feeling a share, slightly modified, of the son's sentiment, at the intrusion upon his family party. He bowed gravely, Mr. Lilykid gracefully, and Kate continued: "Mr. Lilykid has given us quite a pleasant surprise; he has taken rooms at the same house with us for the next month, and will be there till he accompanies us to Saratoga." Such an ominous scowl overspread the face of Master Jones, at hearing of this delightful prospect, that his mother feared he was going to say something, proposed a promenade to her husband, and, in company with him and Augustus, left the two to their *tête-à-tête*.

In two hours, as is usual, the little steamer had

squeezed up the narrow channel of that estuary inside the Hook, known as Shrewsbury River, as far as the landing from which the craft takes its name, —the Highland Lights. This beautiful place is one of Nature's composition pieces. She has taken Butter Hill from the Hudson just below Willis's, with all its measureless depth of great, free, wild wood clinging to it from foot to sky, and set it on the resounding sea-border; from the neighborhood of Philadelphia she copies one of the most charming bits of her own fairy Schuylkill and winds it around the mountain's base; with her whitest pencil she draws the long glistening stretch of narrow beach with a single stroke from Sandy Hook to Deal, and sets that as the other boundary to the stream; and then her grandest inspiration wells up upon her from the Atlantic caves, and the tameless sea, hiding its further fury under the very eaves of the eastern heaven, surges into the picture to tell her that her completest work upon our American coast is done! On the mountain we may stroll all day and ever find new endlessness of fragrant shade, or seat ourselves at night beneath the twin light-houses on the ridge, watching the misty-golden rays of the revolving lantern creep with slow rhythm, like the shining antennæ of some vast lightning fly, upon the dark bosom of the league-broad sweep of sea; in the river the timid stranger may lave himself as in some shallow inland pool at home, — on it he may row or sail; while the brave, and the brave fair whom they deserve, find a tumbling surf to meet

and conquer in laughing wrestle, just across that shining sand-strip on whose hither edge all is so calm. This is the Highlands of Navesink. Yet there are a few people—a few thousand only—who steam past it serenely, for the most part, it is to be hoped, with their eyes shut, and go to that barren waste—shared with them only by the fisher-hawk nesting in grim dead trees whose struggle with desolation lasts till they reach forty feet at the utmost—that grassless strip of powdered glass known as Long Branch; and there, where there is no boating, nor sailing, nor fishing, nor wandering in woods, but only surf for the bravest, rides in sand hub-deep for the most eccentric, billiards, ten-pins, perpendicular imbibition, a mad repetition of last winter's fevered Pyrrhics, and a sleeping in hot closets for the most fathomless of pocket, these few thousands actually pass more or less of the summer.

But the Joneses—and Mr. Lilykid, because of the Joneses—got off at the Highland Lights. In the arms of the indefatigable Mrs. Jarvis, that dauntless woman who, like a landlady variety of the Phoenix, still arises and keeps boarders above the ashes of her Sea-View House, we leave the Joneses for the present. Mr. Lilykid, with carpet-bag and umbrella, strolls up the steps with them.

The climate is heavenly at this place,—the diversions innumerable. Without the slightest misgiving, therefore, we leave the party to entertain themselves, and pass over the space of three weeks. At the end of that

time the postman of Clinton Place left a letter at Dr. Morris's office, which that gentleman opened and found to read as follows:—

“Joon thee 20 Furst, shrooseberry litowsses.

“dere doktor—Thare is Krabbs hear. Tha goe side 1st. Wen itt is lo tyed and runing fast itt is esy cawtt. We ete them & boyl them til tha ar read. tha ar cawt inn a nett, which is a grate menny holes maid ov twain an wove intow a bagg, toe lett out thee watter. kum up hear rite of. spindel Shancz is aboot To Runn a wa with kait Thee da after Tomoro, u sed ude Stopp Him. now Dew it ore ile brake Mi Wird. Thee Bote Sales from robison strete. this is thee wa tow git thair—al thee Stag Lions thatt runn down brodwa goes as fur ass mury strete. Taik enny 1 ov them an git owt att mury. then goe strate down tow Thee Doc. if u dont i shall lern how two Sware fromm 1 ov thee nawty Men which opins Oistors hear fur thee hotell and dew it verry much. johnson is riting fur me Becaws i amm sich a Pigg with mi Penn that evn Iff I shud Beginn nise & clene ide Sune git Inc on my Close Becides i dont no how tow rite enny wa & i Hop ule xquze me, doktor moris fur Takin Thee Libburtey ou Bein A Sirvant & ritin tow u fur master agustis Without noe Interdukshun, which evn Speekin Wudent Bee aloud inn thee Old Kuntry, which things is diferint Inn thee noo, ware al Men is Fre & Equill an noe kweshuns Ascd—which Sirkumstances Halter kases & soe noe mour noose fromm ures affekshinilley willam johnson i mene toe sa Mastir Agustis. pee ess. iff u kum i wunt Lern toe Sware ass a Matir ov Curse.”

Having finished the perusal of this remarkable epistle, the doctor wrote a note to a brother physician, asking

him to take care of the few serious cases, of which he inclosed him a list, marked on the slate which hung at his door, "Called abroad on consultation: back in a week,"— and performed his bachelor packing by the usual method of cramming a dozen shirts into a valise constructed for five, completing the process by sitting down on it till it would lock. This was two o'clock in the afternoon of the day before the elopement was appointed. At six o'clock he was on the wharf of the scene of action. There are two places in the United States where the arrival of a steamboat is still as thrilling a fact to the pulse of popular life as when Fulton ran the first trip on his *Chancellor Livingston*. One of these is Newburgh, on the Hudson, where the whole town, from its corporation-officers down to the small boy with molasses candy for sale, and the still smaller boy that spends his cent with him, is poured upon the long wharf in one compact, surging mass of human cocoa-nuts at every arrival of the *Thomas Powel*. The other is Highland Lights. Here, everybody is always expecting somebody, or in spasms of anxiety to buy a New York four-cent daily for ten cents.

But while the doctor is elbowing his way through the crowd, climbing over trunks and getting involved in the legs of the black porters who carry them, a little hand pulls him by the finger, a little face, the very one he is looking for, peers up into his, and Master Augustus exclaims, with frantic pleasure,—



"You dear, *dear* old fellow ! I'm so glad to see you, I don't know what to do !"

As they emerged more from the crowd, it became apparent how much interest the child had really taken in the arrival. He had been engaged in his favorite pursuit when he saw the boat coming up the river; and just as he was, without a moment's compromise with the social amenities, had run to meet it. A covered basket, evidently, from confused bubblings and scratchings heard within, full of the spoils of crabdom, hung at his waist suspended by a strap; his pantaloons, rolled as far as possible, displayed a pair of fiery-red, sun-burned little snipe legs; and he directed his own and the doctor's steps to the spot where he had thrown his net down for greater ease in running. This being secured, Augustus exclaimed that he was ready to go to the house, and proposed the following programme:

"Now," said he, "we'll walk right into the parlor, and I guess Kate and that old Lilykid are alone together. I'll go straight up to him and say, 'Old Spindle-shanks, you sha'n't have my sister !' and then you come close up behind me and say, 'No ! *that* you sha'n't, you wicked man !' And then we'll call him all the names we can think of, and tell him just what he is, and if he tries to run away, you can knock him down; and if Kate faints, why, you can bring her to, can't you ?"

"Not quite so fast, my dear boy ! everything in time. I want to look around a little this evening, and"—

"Look around ! Thunder ! Why, old Lilykid's going



to try and run away with my sister *to-morrow* ! I heard him telling her that they'd take a sail up to Red Bank and do it, and then come back and ask mamma to ask papa to feel all right about it; and she didn't say she wouldn't ! They were down in the grape-arbor, and they didn't know I was up on the top of the steps and heard it all; but I did ! What do you want to look around for ? Don't you believe *me* ? There aint any time to look around; mamma puts me to bed at eight o'clock, and he'll have Kate *to-morrow* ! ”

“ No he wont, Augustus, my boy ! I've been getting all ready for him. Before your letter came I had gone to the station, where your mamma found you, and heard enough said and got enough papers — they're here, in my breast-pocket — to stop all that very suddenly ! Be patient, now; don't say a word to anybody, not even of my being here, till I say you may; and we'll attend to the matter just as it ought to be done. You shall be with me, too, when it happens; only don't spoil everything by being in too much of a hurry.”

Thus he pacified Augustus, and persuaded him to go up quietly to tea, while he took his valise to the Pavilion next door, and, as he had said, looked around during the evening.

At eight o'clock the broad full moon rose out of the far border of the sea, and began to compete with the rear-guard of the sunset in making that whole American coast heaven as gloriously beautiful as any sky of Italy. In that mixed light the rushing, booming surf on the outer

edge of the sand looked like the breaking upward into a freer air of some great genii-troubled mine of molten gold and silver. On their terraces toward the river the luxuriant trellised grape-vines, fanned in the fresh salt wind, turning now the dark green surfaces of their leaves, and now the snowy under-side toward the light, and seeming thus to come and go like the ghosts of little children, or white-breasted birds who loved the sea border and dallied around it, unable to fly quite away. At the dock the Shrewsbury fleet of yachts, sail-boats, oyster-crafts, and fishing-yawls lay, sharing on all their hulls, spars, and the sails of such of them as had not been furled for the night, the beauty of the universal chastened silver, — rocking gently between the sway of the down tide and the east wind, and all lifted out of their fairer or their meaner uses to one common level of a moon-glorified, fairy-lake flotilla. And already far out on the measureless waters the golden feelers of the revolving lantern began to creep vastly, flashing now on the marble spread of distant ships that seemed motionless, but were really bowling gayly on a scupper breeze, — now on the pathless field of the hillocked sea, — now athwart, and losing themselves in the causeway of silver which ran straight from the beach to the front portal of the moon. With a hundred and fifty other gentlemen smoking their cigars on the Pavilion terrace, — two hundred ladies dreaming or chatting with no covering on their heads but the tiara of the moonlight, — a hundred children of all ages frolicking away the thought

that that kill-pleasure, bedtime, was sooner or later inevitable,—Dr. M'Gregor Morris sat in his wicker arm-chair, and agreed with Nature that she was beautiful. His eye wandered to the other house across the ravine: presently there sauntered forth upon the porch two figures that he knew,—a lithe girl's form, a tall whiskered cavalier,—and the minute-hand of Destiny seemed to run up suddenly to striking-point. It was time to “look around.”

The doctor cast one lingering glance on the beaming earth, ocean, and heaven; sighed, threw away his cigar, and repeated the words of the Missionary Hymn,—

“ ‘Every prospect pleases, and only man is vile!’ ”

Moon, I'd like to pay my respects to you a little longer, but really I haven't time. *Au revoir* for the present!”

Only a narrow ravine, wide enough to admit the passage of a steep cart-road down to the river-beach, separates the terraced lawns of the two houses. It is customary, of course, for gentlemen at the Pavilion to stroll as near the boundary fence of that resort as they please. Dr. Morris availed himself of this fact, and, putting up his collar for an incognito, lit another cigar, to appear as nonchalant as possible, and began pacing up and down the grassy border of the lawn that looked toward the porch of the next house. There was nothing in this act to awake suspicion in the two who sat there side by side, half in moonlight, half in shadow; they paid no attention to him whatever, as much because the sight of unknown gentlemen next door was usual as because

they were preoccupied. Privacy in publicity is one of the many attainments easily acquired by the flirtations, to say nothing of more earnest affairs, of watering-place life.

Before the doctor's cigar was smoked out, he had come to the following conclusions: That the beautiful young girl on the porch was in the toils of the neighboring rascal, by force of one of those strange delusions which affect the simple and the high-minded alike. She believed she loved because she heard that she was loved. Her nature, in its first ardor of womanhood, feeling out into the new world for that necessary something to expend its powers of growth upon, to cling around, to climb up to, had unfortunately touched a villain. She was not to blame: in society, a man's true self is such a deep down substratum, so overlain by successive layers of constitutional caution, educational reserve, handsome physique, elegant manners, tailor-skill, and innumerable deceptive conventional circumstances, that it is hard for any one, however world-sharpened, to penetrate the crust and get at the basis of the human geological system. Much less for a young girl, utterly innocent, pure-hearted, unread in the book of man's hidden badnesses, who, moreover, had a father and mother as frank and unsuspecting of evil as two people could be and live in a handsome free-stone house in an eligible city street, a lot necessarily attained, as times go, by some slight measure of worldly keenness. She had not really loved yet, — something within him made the doctor particularly willing to believe *that*; she was only measur-

ing the depth of her heart, and, striking on a big slimy sea-snake that lay basking a little way down, thought her lead had touched the bottom. The doctor was assured of this, and, in corroboration, he perceived that the gentleman was the chief actor in the *tête-à-tête* across the way. He gestured, he talked, he bent down over his beautiful victim, and altogether seemed putting forth his utmost power, live a travelling magnetizer exerting his will to get and keep his subject "*en rapport.*" Kate listened to him, looked at him motionlessly as a snake-charmed bird; she was under a spell, which the doctor was also willing to believe could be broken by some resolute third person with a will as strong as the fascinator and moral force a trifle greater.

Having "looked around" to his satisfaction, the doctor retired to his room to refresh himself by sleep for the exigency of the morrow. Immediately after breakfast the next morning he despatched, by one of the waiters, the following little note to Mrs. Jones:—

"MY DEAR MADAM, — I am staying at the Pavilion for a few days, and would have taken a still earlier opportunity than this to pay my respects to you, but for the fact that I am arranging a little surprise for one of my friends, and accordingly wish, for a few hours longer, to preserve my incognito. May I entrust the secret of my being here with you until I am able to call in person, and at the same time ask that my little friend Augustus may be permitted to spend the day with me, and, if it is pleasant, take a sail up the river with me this afternoon ?

"Very truly your most obedient servant,

"M'GREGOR MORRIS."

In twenty minutes, the boy brought back this answer:—

“MY VERY DEAR SIR,—Your incognito is perfectly safe with me. It will give me the greatest pleasure to accept your very kind invitation for Augustus, and nothing, certainly, could be more delightful to him. I am afraid the child has very little to amuse him here; he is compelled to seek most of his pleasures alone, as it is, perhaps, hardly to be expected that a boy of his age and somewhat too roguish tendencies could prove very congenial company to a young lady like my daughter. His father is compelled to be a good deal in New York during the day, and I am not as vigorous a playmate as he needs. This afternoon, Kate, with a friend of hers staying here, is expecting to take a sail on the river, and I have been puzzling myself all the morning for some plan to interest my little boy, in case, as is probable, it would be too much trouble to make him one of the party. Your invitation is, therefore, both extremely kind and *apropos*; and as soon as Augustus can be discovered, recalled from his crab-fishery, and put into presentable condition, he shall be sent over to your room. We shall make haste to give you a cordial welcome as soon as you find it convenient to make your promised visit.

“Sincerely and gratefully your friend,

“CATHARINE JONES.”

This note was followed, in about an hour, by Master Augustus. The doctor and he then descended together to the little wharf where all the pleasure-boats of the Shrewsbury fleet still lay moored, it being morning bath-hour, and all the lovers of “a wet sheet and a flowing



sea" disporting themselves in the surf on the other side of the bar. The doctor, therefore, had his pick of the flotilla.

Leading Augustus by the hand, he went up and down the wharf, surveying with critical eye the different crafts in respect to their points for fast-sailing, and at length stood still above a cat-rigged boat, clinker-built, clean-sparred, compactly and sharply modelled, which bore on her stern the name *Shanghai*. For the benefit of those who do not go down unto the sea in cock-boats and behold the mighty wonders that are done, not only on the deep, but on shoals, with vessels drawing one foot water, I say, episodically, that the cat-rig boat is one which carries a mainsail only, and is a favorite on the Shrewsbury river, where the channel, in places, is so extremely narrow that the short tacks one is obliged to make would be much additionally shortened by the projection of a bowsprit, with the alternative of running that delicate piece of timber into the bank on either side. Moreover, the cat-boat can be managed by one man, in trolling for blue-fish or Spanish mackerel, with a wind on the bow; he can man his main-sheet with one hand, feel his squid-line with the other, and tend his tiller between his knees. If he carried a jib a second hand would be necessary to mind the fore-sheet; or, in going about quickly, it might foul, put him in the wind's eye, and set him drifting stern-first, with an eight-pound blue-fish to help himself off the squid with natural alacrity.



"Do you know anything about the *Shanghai*?" asked the doctor, of his companion.

"I guess I do!" answered the youth, enthusiastically.

She's the fastest boat on *this* little river. I'm going to buy her when I'm a man, and peddle clams, if mother'll let me,—that is, if I don't be a lawyer or saw wood."

"Then you've given up the idea, since I saw you first, of going into the bread business?"

"Shut up! What do you want to plague a fellow for? I was a little boy when I said *that*, and I've travelled a good deal since. There's such an *awful nice* man sails that boat! He showed me how to find soft crabs, and he's given me ever so many sails in the *Shanghai*. His name's Van Brunt, and I like him better than all the other captains put together."

"Well, Augustus, I guess, to please you, we'll take Van Brunt's boat for this afternoon."

So they hunted up the master of the *Shanghai*,—were modestly corroborated by him in their opinion of the craft's fast points,—and engaged her from dinner-time until they got tired or through, which, in the opinion of the doctor and Augustus, would occur about simultaneously.

There are too many sources of amusement at Shrewsbury Highlands, from which the two could have extracted pastime until three o'clock, P. M., for me to chronicle here. At that hour, as the doctor sat smoking his after-dinner cigar on the Pavilion terrace, and Master Augustus stood at his kneec learning how they cut

people's legs off, for *his* post-prandial sedative, and very much disappointed to hear that the doctor could not also add any description from eye-witness of the amputation of heads, Morris, who had been all the time watching the wharf, "out of the tail o' his eye," saw Mr. Lilykid assist Miss Jones into the vessel known as *My Own Mary Ann*, and take the tiller in his hand. The captain of the craft proffered his assistance, — seemed even disposed to come on board and sail the *Mary Ann* for them, — but the man devoted to society waved him off with a courtly gesture of the hand, and signified his ability to manage for himself.

As soon as the *Mary Ann* glided from the wharf, the doctor told Augustus to follow him as quick as possible, and started with all speed for the *Shanghai*. Van Brunt had her ready for him, and, without losing a moment's time, the two tumbled aboard, and the lithe little cat ran out into the stream. Her captain, from the wharf, watched her for a moment, to be sure of the seamanship of the doctor, and then retired, perfectly satisfied, to the little oyster and soft-crab stand at the foot of the Pavilion steps, where his cronies most did congregate. The wind was blowing fresh down the river, — that is, toward its mouth at Sandy Hook, though Shrewsbury people persist in calling that direction *up*, referring all motion to New York as the head of things, — but the tide was at the first quarter of a particularly strong flood, and it was very easy for a skilful hand to beat up as far as Minturn's Point, — a bald promontory

of the Highlands where the river divides, one branch bending at right angles westward to Red Bank, and the other keeping straight on to the southward to Branch Port, the point of debarkation for Long Branch. Once around the point, and a boat could lay her course, taking the southerly wind abeam and the favoring tide all the way to the Bank.

The boat that Mr. Lilykid had was a good sailer in good hands, but still not to compare with the *Shanghai*, which was of lighter model, from her clinker build "lifted quicker," spread more mainsail, and trimmed closer to the wind by several points. At the present time the *Mary Ann* was *not* in remarkably good hands, made her tacks irresolutely (on the second one from the wharf nearly missing stays as she went about), and did not take advantage of the flaws, but luffed when she ought to keep on. Morris was a good sailor for an amateur, and possessed what is an advantage to all but practised professionals, a small pennant to steer by, while the object of his chase had none, and was compelled to watch the leach of his sail. So that the *Shanghai* overhauled him rapidly.

Still the old saw, that "a starn chase is a long chase," might have come true but for one little fact which Mr. Lilykid did not know, and whose knowledge the doctor owed solely to that keen-eyed young observer of men and things, Augustus. About ten rods out from Min-turn's Point a weedy shallow commences and runs in a south-easterly direction almost entirely across to the

bar, compelling those who prefer the channel to getting aground to hug the point as closely as possible. The doctor, being put in possession of this bit of information, made his last long tack completely across from the bar to the point, and then luffed up a little to pass through the narrow channel. Mr. Lilykid, being ignorant of it, kept more away while he was still to windward of the *Shanghai*, expecting to make a clear run up the north bend of the river which now opened straight before him. So that, just as Morris passed the point, Lilykid's ears were greeted by that ignoble and repulsive sound, the grinding of the sand upon his keel, and the next moment, with a prolonged groan and a dead thud, the *Mary Ann* became an unexpected guest in the gel-grass and mud-bowers of the treacherous Shrewsbury amphitrite. Augustus gave a prolonged crow, and stood up on the centre-board to the imminent danger of his little shins' more intimate acquaintance with a jibing boom. The doctor pulled him down directly, and told him to keep out of sight for the present, at the same time putting the *Shanghai* right into the wind's eye to drift slowly with the tide, till he "looked around" a little further.

For the first time he now saw Kate plainly. She thought something dreadful had happened, — feared that the *Mary Ann* had been stove in, — and was leaning over the gunwale, very beautiful but pale as death. Mr. Lilykid, for his part, did all that was possible for a man to do; standing on his quarter-deck and calling

with his might and main to the unknown crew of the *Shanghai* to "come heah!" Ah! he little knew how ready they were to answer that hail. The next minute the *Shanghai* had backed out of her narrow channel by the utmost exertions of the doctor with a long sweep, and stood over to their shoal. Only the bows of the *Mary Ann* were grounded; her stern lay in such deep water that the *Shanghai* run her bow close up without danger of sharing the catastrophe. With a loose coil of the main-halliard Dr. Morris quickly made fast, and then in the calmest possible tone said, —

"Miss Jones, permit me to assist you on board our craft."

She looked at him searchingly, recognized him, and the marble whiteness of her face changed to an intense crimson flush; but she leaped on board the *Shanghai*, and passed to the stern, where she sat down, just noticing Augustus, and hid her face in her handkerchief. With a cheerful, graceful step, acquired probably from practice in the Chasseurs during his life-long devotion to society, Mr. Lilykid next advanced, and was about to step upon the bow of the *Shanghai* when the hand of the doctor gently kept him back.

"Excuse me, sir, but there is no room for you on board this boat."

"Weally, Mistah, I don't know your name, but this is most extwa-awdinawy conduct! Not woom? Why, I've known that cwaft of youahs to cawwy twenty-five!"

"Really, Mister, I *do* know your *names*, — this may be true, — but were you ever cognizant of its carrying Mr. Lilykid and Lord Rocamblebury, and Pennyroyal Pike, and English Jimmy the Gentleman, and Andrew Redding? I put it to your good sense whether so many of you wouldn't sink us? I object, my dear sir, to the *Shanghai's* having anything to do with your transportation: this is *not* a convict ship, and *I* am not a police-officer. Though I have had the pleasure of knowing some who were intimately acquainted with you, and recollect being present on one occasion at — street station, where you were detained from a little party, but found bail it seems. However, in going, let me advise you to keep clear of the Highlands, as soon as the tide rises, for there *may* be gentlemen here to see you by this evening's boat. I just drop the hint. Good-day."

As the doctor concluded this long speech, — somewhat *too* long to be put among the terse and remarkable sayings which have become immortal, but not too long for his object, which was delicately to enlighten Miss Jones as to the character of the man her innocence had trusted, — he shoved off the *Shanghai* and sprang to the helm just in time, for, as the little craft swung around on to the wind again, a puff came which nearly brought the water up to her lee combings. Just then the mute astonishment and rage of the devotee of society gave way to a fierce and undisguised expression of the same emotions; he uttered language which it is to be hoped he had never practised in the depth of his



elegant solitude, and wrenching out an awning-pin which stood at the bow of the *Mary Ann*, sprang for the deck of his foe. Sprang, but fell about three feet short, and as Kate cried out in terror not to let him drown, took that trouble for himself, wading back to the stranded vessel, a very wet but by no means a cool gentleman. To conclude forever this fragment of the Lilykiddian biography, let me say that as the tide rose the *Mary Ann* floated again, and, putting her before the wind, her unfortunate captain sped for the coast that is nigh unto Keyport, and there running her ashore, departed for quarters unknown to those gentlemen of the detached service who came up to visit him on the evening boat. And the rest of the acts of Lilykid, are they not recorded in the unwritten imprecations of Jem Conkrite the craft's owner, who, with much expense of "hallowed sweat" and unhallowed breath, reclaimed the *Mary Ann* from the waters of Raritan Bay, with a broken gaff and a splintered centre-board, and after repairing the same got out a writ with innumerable aliases for his absconded debtor, which remaineth unserved unto this day?

In ten minutes from the shoving off of the *Shanghai* she was moored again at the Pavilion wharf. During that short trip the doctor, yea, even Augustus, did all that lay in their power to arouse Kate from the terrible dream in which she seemed immured almost from all outer help. Morris, by the most assiduous, unobtrusive attention, — by speaking, without apparent intention,



of other things than those just present, — attempted to make her feel that he could not possibly be in possession of her secret. And Augustus — if not yet quite fit to be an angel, and with the angels stand — proved himself worthy of belonging to quite as good a class of spirits, for our earthly purposes at least; namely, those who run about instead of standing among our human sinners and sufferers, and make them as comfortable as possible with all sorts of faithful kindness.

As the doctor lifted Kate ashore, she spoke almost for the first time, —

“Is that man really all you told him he was?”

The doctor bowed, and put into her hand a little package of papers containing the data of the police-office.

“Then God bless you!” said she, pressing his hand with a look of unutterable gratitude. “You saved Augustus; and now, — you will never know on earth what good you have done *me!*”

---

#### IV. BEING A FEW FRAGMENTS FROM THE LIFE OF THE BOY AND HIS FRIENDS.

But the doctor *did* know, and on earth, too (though his feet did not seem to be exactly touching it at the time), the good he had done, and was to do, for the little brother's sister.

During the same summer, toward its close, a little bird, swinging on the twig of one of those trees which, at the upper point of Goat Island, look toward the Niagara Rapids, caught this little bit of a talk and brought it to me.

“And can *you* really, — with all the jealous, unsharing, rival-hating heart of a man, still *love me*? *Me*, whose heart once went so bitterly astray, and was nearly wrecked forever?”

“Not your *heart*, Kate; your *head* only! You were merely feeling your depth, — or, better still, merely trying your strength to mount. If you thought you had reached your full height, is not that what many do, and then sit sadly on the lower stairs, unsatisfied, pining, miserable; looking with despair through a whole life on the bright blessed height, far over them, to which they might have scaled; knowing that not their heart at all, but their young, untaught head, has brought this spell-bound wretchedness upon them? And shall I love you less for remembering the ladder on which you climbed up to a true man’s soul, — believing in my heart of hearts that you have now reached your height?”

“Yes, I *have* reached it.”

“God bless my darling!”

There was a wedding in Twenty-third street. Little Brother sat up to it, without doing the most trifling thing that was disagreeable. Indeed, the little Misses Blummerie said he was charming! And he did both

look and act as handsomely as any youth who longed to put away the *enfant terrible* part of boy character possibly could. His chief amusement, when not bringing up little girls by the hour together to kiss the bride, consisted in poking with his small finger the side of the groom's white satin waistcoat, and whispering, with most amiable inaudibleness, —

“*Didn't* we dish him, old fellow? — *say!*”

About one o'clock, A. M., when the little girls had gone and the big ones were going, Master Augustus yielded to Nature's kind restorer, and was surrendered to her in a state of most unreserved capitulation.

Just before the lights were turned off for the night, the new bride and bridegroom stole into the little bed-chamber where the little brother was sleeping, as he was wont to brag, “all alone by himself.”

They both bent down and kissed the rosy cheek which, under its curly corn-silk, was lying on the little open palm; looked tenderly at him, and then at each other.

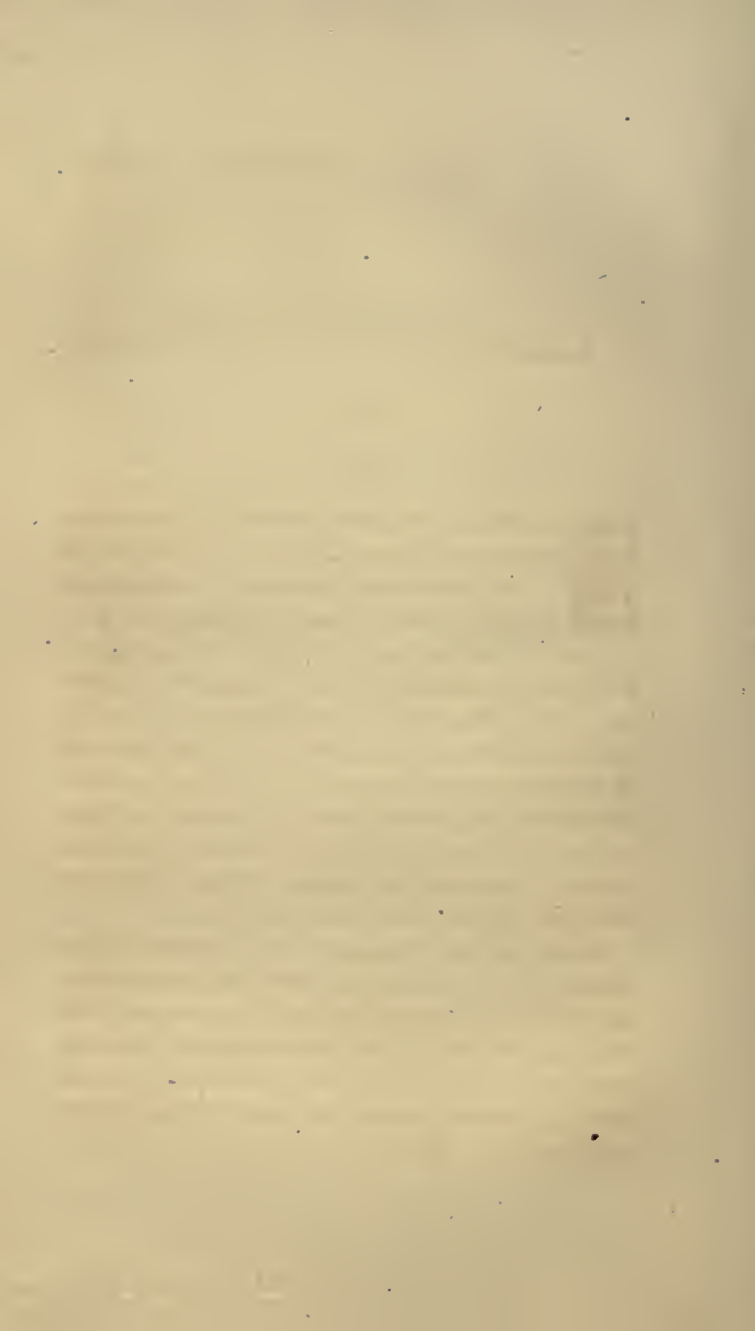
“Once you thought he was a little imp.”

“And now I think he is a little angel.”

And what they both thought was, that it was not such a bad thing to have a little brother after all.

## FLEEING TO TARSHISH.

(107)



# FLEEING TO TARSHISH.



## I.



FOR three years Jonas Moddle had been a daily student of Greek and Hebrew. He was just out of the Theological Seminary — Reverend, and thinking himself reverable. He not only knew the original for the contested passages in St. John, but what Moses has said on a subject which interests nobody éxcept the Cohoes Mastodon. He was a splendid Hebrew geologist, and a noble fossil minister. In Greek he needed no lexicon. In Hebrew he found more trouble on account of the left-hand-way of reading; but still knew enough to dig out an ingenious derivation in support of an accepted theory. (Grecians and Hebræans will know what I mean.)

He also knew some English. In exegesis he was unrivalled. On a single passage he would say more than any other member of the class on the four gospels. The wonderful sermon, in which he electrified all the brethren, by proving the whole plan of salvation from the text, "Og, King of Bashan," will never be forgotten by the alumni of St. Elymas.

So promising a young man could not be without "calls." Almost simultaneously, and within a week of his ordination, he received two invitations to become a settled minister. One from the Church of St. Simon Stylites, in New York, another from a feeble but struggling organization in a small town of Western Missouri. On the very day he received both these invitations, he attended a missionary anniversary, and heard a Western rector give some account of the state of religion in his section. Christianity, out there, seemed at a low ebb. Six weeks previous, he had lost one of his wardens in a knife-fight with a Presbyterian deacon upon the subject of free-will. The survivor retained too much sectarian prejudice to come to the funeral. Some people, to attend his service, rode twenty miles over the worst roads in Christendom, — the women, like the men, on horseback, and frequently astride. His parochial income last year amounted to \$420. He had repeatedly preached to an audience of but a dozen whites; though, he added with some hesitation, — as if apologizing for the fact, and not feeling entirely sure but there was something political in it, — a humble variety of piety prevailed rather widely among the negroes.

After the meeting was over, Mr. Moddle sought an introduction to Mr. Bowers, and inquired of him if, in his peregrinations through his section, he had ever heard of such a place as Muddy Creek. "It is the next parish to mine," replied Mr. Bowers, "and dreadfully in need of an able man it is! I sometimes run across when the



roads are passable, and I've not got too tired through the week, to hold an evening service there. But there's astonishing little interest there about church matters. The few people that know they've got souls to save come pretty regular, and the very chief of 'em, Binks, is an earnest Christian man; but, dear me! they can hardly get together enough congregation to take the loneliness out of a jury-room in the court-house."

"Ah, indeed!" replied Mr. Moddle; and then he went home to look over his letters. The one from Mr. Binks was upon half a sheet of commercial bill-paper, and, although not a remarkably fine specimen of a churchman's hand, made up for it on the margin by several very accurate impressions of his thumb. It was sealed with a red wafer, and this is a correct transcript of it:—

"MUDDY CREEK, Mo., May 9.

"REV. J. MODDLE: Dear Sir,—Making a tower to the eastward this spring, I went to New York. While there, I heard you preach. It was in that white church up Broadway. I hadn't for a long time heard a sermon so able as that was; by it my soul was enlarg'd. Now there are two things we want out here to Muddy,—an able man, and a place to praise God in. If we can get the former, I'm sure we can get the latter. We are a mighty little flock now; but we're all of us faithful and our hearts is set. Even while we have to worship in the court-house we don't forget the assembling of ourselves together; and if we had a good strong man to help us

we'd put our shoulders to the wheel with him; and, my dear sir, it's in my heart to believe we could get the Lord's charriat out of this slew. The whole country round about seems given up,—if we didn't know the Lord never gives anything up. There's but few reapers out here for the harvest, though the field is white with it. Such lóts of men and women and little boys and girls that don't know anything about the gospel, and havn't nobody to tell 'em—my heart does feel for 'em too! If you'll come to us, my dear sir, we're ready to shear our best with you. We can only pledge six hundred a year for the first year; but till we do better, there's a home in my family for you, and welcome. The salary is not much, but time will raise it. We'll all of us feel as if we could live better when the church is built up. So that will change; but there's one thing never will change, my dear sir, and that is the sureness you may feel of finding us to your back whenever hard pushing's wanted in the work of the Lord. Please consider, and write to direction of

“Yours resp'y,

“ROBERT BINKS.”

The other note was much briefer,—had at its head a monogram in mediæval letters of bright scarlet,—smelt of cedar-lined secretaries,—was sealed with a coat of arms, and read thus:—

“NEW YORK, May 15th.

“REV. JONAS MODDLE: Dear Sir,—I am instructed by the vestry and wardens of St. Simon Stylites to an-

nounce that at their meeting on the 12th inst., you were unanimously elected to the rectorship of their church. Should you gratify us by accepting that mark of the high regard in which we hold you, please grant me an early reply. I have only further to say, that we have at your disposal a rectory attached to the church, and the parochial income of our clergyman is \$4000 per ann.

“I remain, Rev. and Dear Sir, resp’y yours,

“M. CATESBY SPROULL,

“*Clerk of Vestry.*”

Mr. Moddle read both letters with profound attention, — laid them on the table, — clasped his hands across the back of his head, and tipped back his chair. The balancing attitude of his body was only symbolic of the posture of his mind. Poor both in its style and its proffers as was the letter from Missouri, there was no denying that it moved him. After that, and the testimony of the Rev. Joseph Bowers, it was impossible to doubt that Muddy Creek needed a highly able man, and was a vast field of usefulness.

Nobody familiar with his own nature can need an enumeration of the arguments which St. Simon Stylites pleaded in its favor to a human heart. But apart from the worldly splendor of the position, was to be considered the question whether a much less able man than the Rev. Jonas would not do for Muddy Creek; and the scholarly eminence he had spent so much pains in acquiring be quite thrown away in that section, though most

advantageous in New York. This thought involved subtle casuistry. Self is a veiled client, and never appears at the bar of conscience in person. The duty of using advantages argued on its side and that of St. Simon. If the judge granted its suit, was he acting more through favor to it or conviction by its advocate?

Casuistry keeps things tipped back on two legs for a long time. Mr. Moddle's chair might have remained in that position till tea-time, had not a classmate hurriedly called in at the seminary room, which he was still occupying, to borrow his valise for a trip to New York, — a city situated only a shirt and two collars distant from the gables of St. Elymas.

"Just time to dump in a few things and reach the train!" said young brother Chawsuble. "Where is it?"

"On the floor in the closet. When are you coming back?"

"Day after to-morrow morning. Where's the key? Oh! here it is."

"I've a great mind to go with you" —

"Will you, though? Capital! You can stay at my aunt's with me."

Mr. Moddle wanted the last volume of Alford, and had long been intending to have his name gilded on the back of a prize Gesenius. Besides, he might consult with some of the elder clergy on the subject of his choice, and, if he made up his mind, see the vestry of St. Simon Stylites in person. His chair came down on its full number of legs; and in a couple of minutes more the room

in the valise was shared between him and Mr. Chawsuble. Just before leaving the apartment, he took the two letters from the mantel-piece, and inserted them, at hazard, between the leaves of a big family Bible, which adorned the table under his looking-glass.

During their short ride on the cars, the noise prevented conversation, and the studently habits of the two had too much taxed their eyes to permit of their reading sentences which bounced along at forty miles the hour. Mr. Chawsuble was going to see a sweet girl to whom he was affianced, and in view of that meeting found both ample and satisfactory occupation for his mind in the set and polish of a new pair of patent-leathers, favorably placed for contemplation upon the opposite cushion. Mr. Moddle, left to the companionship of his thoughts, found less that was gratifying in them. If a contented mind is a perpetual feast, an unsettled one is a supper of the Barmecide. There is all the porcelain and silver ware of possible advantage, but no succulent fruition in the whole of it. At last, wearied out with the air-beating gymnastics of casuistry, Mr. Moddle laid his head back on the neck-rest and tried to doze. The ruckety-tuckety-tuck of the car-wheels seemed rhythmically to carry on his cogitations for him, with their accustomed wondrous translatability by the imagination, now saying, "My heart does feel for 'em too;" and now "Four thousand a—year and a—rectory. Little by little this dactylic beat became more and more independent of Mr. Moddle's volition, and he was sound asleep before the

next station closed the measure with a protracted spondee. Each succeeding stop interrupted his slumber but a moment, and he was not thoroughly aroused until Mr. Chawsuble shook him up to join the crowd in their stampede for the ferry-boat.

The roar and glare of the great city acted on him, homœopathically, like a sedative. Having taken a Fifth avenue stage, as that vehicle turned in at Eleventh street, he remembered that one of St. Simon's vestrymen lived right on his route up-town. He accordingly told Chawsuble that he would be at the house of the latter's aunt about nine o'clock, and stay all night if she invited him, — in the mean time making a call on Mr. Mansion. The vestryman's parlor was a soul-entrancing contrast to the bare and dingy primness of the scholastic cells at St. Elymas. It was a warm May twilight, and through the open balcony window the bland sea-breeze fanned an exquisite fragrance from the wistarias which climbed to the second story. The gas had not yet been lighted; for the lingering purple of the western sky made the room winy with its reflection. It was like looking at life through a medium of rich old port, and no Vandal had come to dispel the illusion by any sallow, artificial glare. The room was yet sufficiently illuminated to suggest that the Mansions possessed excellent taste in art, showing upon the walls two delicious Kensetts, a Colman, a Gignoux, and one picture each, in their loveliest vein, by Iuness and Gifford. Mellowed by the twilight, these paintings seemed less what they were than magi-



cal windows, through which the eye could look from one standing-place into many far and beautiful countries. Mr. Moddle sank into one of the luxurious divans as into a pleasant velvet grave; and as he admiringly drew across his knee a superbly blooming afghan, which hung there, he could realize the emotions with which a person who has died in the odor of sanctity comes back to find his body reposing under rich turf and daffodils. Fresh roses, mignonette, and daphne were in a small Etruscan vase upon a malachite stand near the arch; in all but perfume the exquisite flowers of the carpet were scarcely less real. The furniture was all carven of the richest woods, and the ceiling was panelled, with lovely faces between the divisions. A great rack, supported by black walnut sphynxes, held in one corner a portfolio bulging with rare studies and engravings. Everywhere about the room, in graceful disorder, were scattered articles of vertu and reminiscence of travel; comic statuettes from the Boulevards; chalets in orange and apple wood from Berne; Buddhist charms from Yeddo; lacrymatories from the catacombs; and bronzes from Pompeii.

While Mr. Moddle sat waiting for Mr. Mansion, the door of the back parlor opened and some one passed in without noticing his presence. As his own eyes were turned toward the sky and the wistarias, he only heard a footfall, and, having once turned his head enough to see that it was not approaching him, pursued the pleasant devotional train which had been set in motion by his surroundings. A moment after and a skilful hand, in



the room behind him, was striking the opening chords of a harp-arrangement of Lumbye's "Traumbilder." The instrument was one too rarely found in any circle. The circle in which Mr. Moddle had moved was so little conversant with it, that, after momentarily taking it for a piano, he started with curiosity to see what it was, then bethought himself what it must be, and leaned back again into his pleasant grave. His action evidently had not been so demonstrative as to betray his presence, for the skilful hand went on throwing its magic shuttle through the warp of the strings, as unconsciously as if there were no one within a thousand leagues to be wrapt in its web of gramarye. Mr. Moddle was glad that the owner of the hand had not seen him, — that Mr. Mansion had not arrived to talk with him, for he was now able to shut his eyes and give himself entirely up to the enchantment. When the invisible player came to the exquisite passage, written as a Cithara solo in the original, and of course transcribed for the highest strings of the harp, Mr. Moddle felt as if there were nothing good and lovely of which the human soul is not capable, and experienced a foretaste of that sweet, self-approving peace which belongs to those who have become perfected already. He thought St. Catharine, carried to heaven by angels, must have felt where their fingers touched her, thrills such as these which came to his nature to blend with the twilight and the odors. Just as the player struck the chords of the finale, a door flew abruptly open right behind him, and a hurried voice exclaimed, —

"Sorry to have kept you waiting, Mr. Moddle; but fact is I've had a meeting of the Ronkus River Railroad Directors in my library ever since second board. First moment I've had to see you; hope you're well: got Sproull's letter? Thought likely. You'll stay to dinner, of course. Jane! Jane! Where is she? Thought I heard her playing on the harp" —

Somewhere in the midst of this rapid address, Mr. Moddle found an interstice to thrust his hand and get it shaken. As Mr. Mansion concluded his sentence, a lady stepped out of the shadow and came toward them.

"Oh, here you are! Let me present Mr. Moddle, my dear: — Mrs. Mansion, Mr. Moddle, — our future rector you know, Mrs. Mansion."

Mr. Moddle was about to stammer something which might politely indicate that if Mrs. Mansion did know she was better off than he was, when Mrs. Mansion came into the full illumination of the spring twilight, and stopped him, — stopped him no more by the affable hand which she extended, and the necessity of speaking words of salutation, than by the unaided effect of her visible presence.

Mrs. Mansion was the most impressive woman he had ever seen. Not that she was haughty, not that she was queenly in her carriage. She was in no wise the first, — she was perfectly the last of these; but her beauty had a powerful sympathetic quality, which gained little help from mere superior bearing. She met Mr. Moddle with the respect of a hostess and a lady, but she met him as if

she had known him always. There was flattery to him in this appearance of having needed no introduction; there was captivity for him in that clear direct way with which she looked into his eyes. The young man felt as if he were altogether comprehended, and blushed as he had not since he rose to read his maiden sermon. The lady's *personnel* was of the most sumptuous blonde type. Her figure and face were those of perfected womanhood,—the contours all roundly moulded, the expressions all speaking of the fulness of life. Her hand and the arm which shone through the gossamer sleeve of her dress were delights of whiteness, rich curve, and dimple. Her eyes were large and of a reddish-hazel, and her hair a golden also touched with red. When her lips spoke, her face was expressive of infinite changes, and played perfect accompaniment to every tone of a wonderfully sweet, low voice.

Mr. Moddle heard her, saw her, and quite forgot what he was going to say. There was really no need of his saying anything, for the involuntary silence of youth is the highest compliment which can be paid to a superb woman; and, moreover, whatever was to be said, Mr. Mansion was quite ready to say for him.

"So," he rattled on, "you'll stay to dinner with us,—that's right. By the way, Pryng and Carmine are both here now, directors in this Ronkus business. They're both members of St. Simon's,—Pryng's a warden. I'll ask them to dinner, too. Board will rise about eight. Sorry to keep you so long, Jane."

"It's of no consequence to me, dear, if Mr. Moddle can excuse the condition the soup will be in by that time."

"Pray, madam, don't speak of it," said Mr. Moddle, wondering if she knew how often they had any soup at all in the seminary refectory, and how easy it would be for Mr. Moddle's utmost idea of a Sybarite to eat kale-brose in company with such a woman.

"Very well," said Mr. Mansion, "I'll return to the board. Expect Pryng and Carmine, then, Jane. Want them to see Mr. Moddle. They want to see him themselves, I know. Mr. Moddle, I'll leave you in charge of Mrs. Mansion for an hour. Show him the new Gérome, my dear."

After Mr. Mansion had gone, Mr. Moddle told Mrs. Mansion that he was glad to have discovered the source of so much happiness as he had received from her music.

"And were you there all the time?" asked the lady, with the same direct look as had first met him, followed by a down-glance of shyness.

"I must ask your pardon for that intrusion upon your privacy."

"Oh, I was only playing to amuse myself, and if I made any one else happier, so much gained. Especially some one to whom I owe a debt of the same kind. I have heard you preach."

Mr. Moddle blushed again. He had become inured to compliments from doctors of divinity, — but this was quite another thing.

"I supposed St. Simon's would invite you. I was

glad to hear you had been invited. I am still gladder to find that you have accepted. You'll find everything in your favor, I'm sure" —

Again Mr. Moddle rapidly bethought himself how he should express the fact of his acceptance still being a matter of consultation; but the murmur of that sweet voice had a rhythm which he could not break by saying only such awkward things as immediately occurred to him.

"Many of our principal people have heard you," continued Mrs. Mansion, "and the impression is universally a pleasant one. The Sunday you preached at Grace, I was only sorry Simpson had a cold, for the best music of the pulpit always seems to call for the best in the choir. We have a very good choir at St. Simon's."

"Do you sing as well as play?" asked Mr. Moddle.

"Just about as well, however that may be. I love music. It is life and air and home and friends to me, and often it appears religion to me, too. Do you ever feel so, Mr. Moddle?"

"It is, in a sense," replied Mr. Moddle.

"And you love it, I am sure!"

"I do."

"We shall get on well together," said Mrs. Mansion.  
"Do you sing?"

"I have an uncultivated tenor voice. May I hear you sing?"

"I think we have time for a duet." She looked at the

ornolu clock on the mantel-piece, then went to the door and listened.

"Yes, it's only half-past seven, and upstairs they sound as busily engaged as ever. I'm glad you're coming to be their rector, Mr. Moddle. These men do nothing now-a-days but stupefy their souls with business. A man of artistic, devotional tastes is necessary for their salvation. It's positively soothing to think of such an one." And again she looked him in the eyes with enthusiastic directness. "What shall we sing?" she continued, going toward the piano.

Mr. Moddle rose and followed her.

"Indeed," said he, "you must remember I have never made music a scientific study. The utmost I'm adequate to is some simple song of Abt or Mendelssohn."

"Then you certainly know 'I would that my love?' and here it is."

He was unable to deny that he had sung his part of the duet. His voice, though untrained, had been much praised, and was in good condition. That Mrs. Mansion had found that out,—rather, seemed to know it intuitively,—was a pleasant and stimulating fact. He stood by her side with a feeling of conscious ability to do his best; and as she began the first sweet movement, his voice underran and blended in with hers directly. Hers was a deliciously rich, sympathetic, and flexible mezzo-soprano, cultivated after Garcia's school, till every note of it was automatically true, and entirely at her call. Mr. Moddle could not but know that such a voice was



superior to his own; still she took away from him all possibility of feeling it by flowing into all his deficiencies and draping all his angles, — holding or accelerating for him with such ease, and everywhere chording with him so perfectly, that in a flush of happy pride he wondered how he had never sung so before, seeming to hear but one voice, and that a magnificent one.

“They are coming downstairs,” said Mrs. Mansion, rising and shutting the piano upon the dying chords of the duet. “You’ve really a very fine tenor! I wish we could sing more.”

There was a noise of good-evenings and walking-sticks in the hall; presently the front-door was slammed shut, and then the parlor-door opened, letting in Messrs. Mansion, Carmine, and Pryng. As they entered, Mrs. Mansion rang to have dinner served, and it was announced before the introductions were concluded. Though the other guests were his decided seniors, Mr. Moddle was selected to hand his hostess down. Though the honor and the soft white arm which accompanied it were very pleasant to Mr. Moddle, he had an under-sense that they belonged to the already consenting rector of St. Simon’s — and was he that? It must be confessed that such questions are very *mal apropos* on a staircase, with a fine woman at your side, her dress not to get under your feet, and dinner, with its banishment of disputable subjects, close imminent. So Mr. Moddle led the way with his hostess, and only remarked to her upon the beauty of her *bouquet de corsage*.



"Did you notice it?" asked Mrs. Mansion, looking over her shoulder at the young man, her lips parting with a gratified smile, which made her quite radiant. "I am fond of wearing flowers; but dear me," — and she tossed her head slightly backward toward the solid business men, — "Mr. Mansion would never know whether I had a japonica or a bavardia here." She put her dimpled hand on her bouquet as she spoke, and plucking out a little sprig of heliotrope, arranged it in his button-hole, asking, as they entered the dining-room, —

"Is it ministerial though, to wear flowers?"

"I believe there are strictarians," replied Mr. Moddle, "who think it too gay."

"Well, this heliotrope should surely be allowed you; you know what it means?"

And once more her beautiful direct eyes looked in his. Mr. Moddle recollected reading in his sister's copy of "The Language of Flowers," that it meant "Devotion;" and, although in that exercise there was nothing for a clergyman to be ashamed of, blushed again.

Mr. Pryng was a dignified man, who affected the voluminous white cravats of the Regency, had a generous red nose, spoke with a husky solemnity, and, but for the large diamond *solitaire* set in his snowy frill, might have pardoned anybody who mistook him for a butler with a bad influenza. Mr. Carmine was a pale, scholarly person, with long white fingers, and no beard but a mustache. Nothing of the successful business man about him but the strong perpendicular wrinkle

between the cool gray eyes, and with a general look of being accustomed to spend his up-town hours in a library, getting up costly monographs on the Probable Locality of the first New York Pump, or preparing speeches on the Distinguished Unheard-of, for the Historical Society. Mr. Mansion was, as we have seen, what the world calls a driving man,—never late,—never with a minute to spare ; and, like most people who travel on high steam, compactly built, somewhat below the medium size. His large aquiline nose and his sandy gigot whiskers resembled him a little to the traditional British type of the East India Major; but the moment he opened his mouth there was no confounding his individuality,—he was the American Business Man raised to the highest power.

Each of these men, after his manner, paid flattering deference to Mr. Moddle. Speaking of the past as if he were already in it and had merely poked his head over his neck-cloth as over some grand chronological hedge to watch the present age degenerate, Mr. Pryng compared Mr. Moddle to the lamented Bunsclough, who electrified St. Tabitha with his eloquence when she used to worship down-town, — “when your father was a boy, sir,” said Mr. Pryng, regarding with compassion a young man whose misfortune had detained him from the world until it had passed the height of its season, like strawberries after the Fourth.

“Dr. Lumper’s library is to be sold, I hear,” said Mr. Carmine. “It ought to go with the rectory. Said to

be the finest critical and exegetical collection belonging to any theologian in New York."

"Bless me, you don't say so!" exclaimed Mr. Mansion, with all the more enthusiasm that he was struggling to acquire some conception what manner of thing this might be.

"I shouldn't wonder if it were so," replied Mr. Carmine.

"Great man, Lumper," said Mr. Pryng, solemnly; "always reminded me of the elder Puddon."

"Did you ever see your predecessor's library, Mr. Moddle?" asked Mr. Carmine. "Up to the time we lost him — h'm, that's — a year ago this June, — people came from far and near to consult authorities in St. Simon's rectory."

"And a good old man he was," said Mrs. Mansion, — "John, pass the spinach to Mr. Moddle, — only he stayed too much in that same library. A shepherd ought to be more with the lambs. But I've kept Mr. Carmine waiting for his answer. Did you ever see the library?"

"I called once on the doctor when I first thought of taking orders. My eye, untutored as it then was, could see that the library must be very valuable; but of course I had no chance to examine it."

"No; I remember you only stayed a few minutes."

Hearing Mrs. Mansion say this, Mr. Moddle looked up at her in astonishment.

"How do I know?" said Mrs. Mansion. "Ask me sometime!"

"You say it's to be sold?" spoke Mr. Mansion; "and it ought to be bought for the rectory."

"*En permanence*," gravely added Mr. Pryng, who had been consul to Nantes under one of the Adamses.

"I'll give a thousand," said Mr. Mansion.

"So will I," said Mr. Carmine.

"And I," added Mr. Pryng.

"Three thousand already!" exclaimed Mrs. Mansion, with a smile, which to Mr. Moddle seemed abundantly worth that amount. "Now, what shall poor I do? I see, — I'll get up a fair."

The three elderly men for a moment looked queer. Perhaps they were thinking whose bank-account would be drawn on for the wool which went into the afghans, and the springs which gave elasticity to the *prie-dieux*.

"Jane is doing more than any of us; that's at least two thousand more, my dear," said Mr. Mansion.

"Now for Mr. Moddle; what will *you* give, sir?" asked Mrs. Mansion, smiling straight into the young man's eyes.

What would you or I have done? Was this any time to be talking about the uncertainty of Mr. Moddle's relations with St. Simon's?

"I will preach a sermon upon Clerical Libraries," answered Mr. Moddle, under inspiration of irresistible enthusiasm; "announcing that a collection will be taken

up to swell your private contributions and the proceeds of the fair."

"A very original and well-chosen subject, too," said Mr. Carmine.

"It quite revives my recollections of the elder Belamy," said Mr. Pryng; "though his wife's grandfather, the celebrated Carter, was even more striking in his selection of strong themes."

"I think we may safely call that fifteen hundred more," said Mr. Mansion.

"Why, you come next to me on the contributors' list," said Mrs. Mansion.

"That position is everywhere a happiness and an honor, madam," answered Mr. Moddle,—the sustained inspiration carrying him into a courtliness which surprised him.

Dessert over, and nothing but the nuts and sherry left upon the table, Mrs. Mansion told the gentlemen that she knew they must want their cigars, and that, when they had enjoyed them, they would find her in the drawing-room. As she went out, she bowed playfully toward all the table.

"I don't smoke," said Mr. Moddle. "So, if you'll excuse me, I believe I'll follow Mrs. Mansion."

"The father of the present venerable Dr. Canaster always regarded smoking as decidedly injurious to the polemic faculties," said Mr. Pryng, with the air of handing down to Mr. Moddle the approval of ancient times.

Mr. Moddle found in the drawing-room abundance to compensate him for the unappreciated luxury of a *Cabaña*. There were pictures to be looked at and a lovely woman to be sung with or talked to. There was a question to be asked, and Mr. Moddle's curiosity was too great long to delay it.

"Oh, by the way," said Mr. Moddle, in a momentary pause ensuing upon his praise of a delicious little serenade,—the "*Riez ! Chantez ! Dormez !*" of Gounod,—"by the way, you told me to remind you of something. How did you become aware of my being in Dr. Lumper's library?"

"The door between the library and the parlor was left open on a crack, and a ladies' sewing-society met that afternoon at the rectory. I sat just opposite the crack, and saw you all the time you were talking with the doctor,—saw and heard you both."

"And do you remember anything we said?"

"I remember that he was very brusque with reference to some convictions of yours,—inexcusably harsh, considering he had to do with a young convert."

"My views in favor of a more splendid ritual, you mean?"

"Did you not rather abruptly close the interview on that account?"

"Really, your memory is astonishing!"

"It serves me pretty infallibly as a keeper of things and people I like. I casually asked Dr. Lumper the name of the gentleman who had been in his study; and



I gained a pleasure, when I heard whom our people had invited, by not having forgotten it. I agree very strongly with you, Mr. Moddle."

As she said this, she frankly put out her hand. Mr. Moddle pressed it with apostolic fervor. Mrs. Mansion continued, —

"You mustn't expect much sympathy from Mr. Mansion. Neither he nor Mr. Carmine nor Mr. Pryng are of our way of thinking; though that's of little consequence. Mr. Pryng is what you've seen for yourself, — one of those men that knew your great-grandfather intimately, and are sorry to find you so little like him. Mr. Carmine is a philosopher, and, I suppose, patronizes religion very much as a liberal-minded baker would be friendly with a candy-man. They are both generous men; so is Mr. Mansion. The fundamental lack with all of them is sentiment, — devotion, you know. I'm speaking plainly; but, if I discuss those I know so well to — perhaps I ought to say — a comparative stranger" —

"Oh, no!" said Mr. Moddle, giving a warmer grasp to the frank hand still retained in his own.

"It's only because I want our new rector to succeed in every respect. There are plenty who do agree with you. With discretion, we can all help each other. So forgive an officious whisper from behind the scenes. Shall we go to look at the conservatory?"

Mr. Moddle loved flowers, and cheerfully followed his hostess into a fine greenhouse, extending the entire



width of the house and to the height of the second story. Here, where an exiled banana found room to sprawl its enormous palms, and oranges sighed perfumed longings for their native tropics, beneath a crown of gas-jet brilliants which hung close to a dome of stained glass, they paused to pick mignonette and look at the newest marvel in petunias. Not far from them were the windows of the dining-room, which opened on a level into the conservatory. One of the windows was slightly ajar; and, as Mrs. Mansion was pointing out to Mr. Moddle the marvellous achievement of her gardener in producing a petunia with one red and two mauve spots instead of two red and one mauve, like the last one, both the lady and the minister had their attention irresistibly called to the fact that the gentlemen were not yet through with their cigars. If the smoke of well-flavored Havanas had not betrayed them, their voices would.

As Mr. Pryng helped himself to a final glass of sherry, he observed that he was glad to see Mr. Moddle a young man of such vigorously-correct habits, and something in his manner,—he had been puzzling over the likeness and only just identified it,—which recalled that eminently holy man, the late Mokes.

"A man of very fine, scholarly tastes, too," said Mr. Carmine, "which Mokes had not."

"No, sir," replied Mr. Pryng; "but Mokes had foundation."

"Which I think our new rector also has," added Mr.

Mansion. "There was considerable good sense in the prompt way he took up the glove and proposed to preach a sermon. We're well suited, and I'm glad of it."

When Mr. Moddle caught the first words of this conversation, he made a natural, involuntary movement to avoid intrusion on the right of private interpretation as directed at himself; but the lady smiled, put her finger to her lip, and laid a hand detainingly upon his lapel. Thus was he compelled to hear his own praises through.

"You know," said Mrs. Mansion, laughingly, as she led him away from the window, "that it was no fault of yours. You couldn't help obeying your hostess, and you're not responsible for eavesdropping. I couldn't resist making you aware how well they think of you."

The gentlemen now gave signs of rising, and Mr. Moddle went back with Mrs. Mansion to meet them in the drawing-room. We need not linger with them. Their after-dinner conversation was no more instructive than the average of mankind's, and when Mr. Pryng and Mr. Carmine had wished Mr. Moddle a good-evening, he recollected that he was to be at Chawsuble's aunt's by nine o'clock, and stood up to take leave of his hosts. Each gave him a hand and accompanied him to the door. As he was about going out he suddenly bethought himself.

"Oh!" said he, "I meant to talk over with you the question of that acceptance."

"It's of no consequence in the world.. Sproull's office is right across from me in Wall street, and I'll give it to him verbally to-morrow."

"But," — began Mr. Moddle.

"Hey!" exclaimed Mr. Mansion, in a loud voice. This ejaculation was addressed to a driver of the Fifth avenue line, whose lamps were just coming abreast the house. "Excuse me for seeming to hurry you off," continued he to Mr. Moddle; "but if you've to be at Forty-fifth street by nine o'clock there's your stage."

"Well, good-night," replied Mr. Moddle, converting a momentary pause of irresolution into a hurried plunge down the steps.

## II.

AT Chawsuble's aunt's, Mr. Moddle was apportioned a room with her nephew, and kept that young gentleman awake half the night with the light in his eyes,—a grievance all the more galling because he had just come home from the pretty girl's, fully determined to dream about her. When at last Chawsuble got as impatient as can be permitted to a divine, Mr. Moddle turned off the bracket, and lay down by his friend's side, but not to sleep till the sparrows were twittering in the silver of first dawn.

He was kept waking, not by light, like Chawsuble, but by that contest of mixed motives which is like a clash and alternation of light with darkness. Oh that, as in old times, God but once spoke audibly ! He forgot that when he did, the people said it thundered,—that even Samuel thought it was Eli, and Balaam was indisposed to obey it at all. Oh for some one to show the right way !

Before him passed and repassed the imagined form of rough old Binks, working away with his best shoulder under the Lord's "charriat weel" at Muddy Creek, and

never abandoning his confidence of some day getting at least a corduroy to heaven through that "slew," though the only neighbors he had to call on either were gamblers, sots, and bullies, or lived twenty miles away from the court-house, whose loneliness, according to the Rev. Joseph Bowers, they were inadequate to remedy.

Then his thoughts floated away into a bland twilight, where zephyrs were fainting with music and perfume; he heard his own name spoken with admiration by the admirable; beauty and success ministered to him, and he sat in a grand gloom of old books and carved walnut. Nor were his fancies of a mere religious sybarite; he saw the dim yet many-tinted aisles of St. Simon's streaming with hearers, drawn by his solemn reading and his persuasive speech; saw his parish children gathered in bright attire round him and their Christmas-tree, and heard the low, reverent breathing of communicants to whom his hand should seem bringing bread from heaven. He thought of the poor, for whose sake he should be an organizing centre to all sewing-societies, fairs, and Protestant Sisters of Mercy.

And by which of these pictures was he most allured? By which ought he to be? If it was his duty to refuse St. Simon's, how should he explain his silence upon that point at Mr. Mansion's? In this state of feverish uncertainty, he fell asleep with the birds' waking. Chawsuble, being of a forgiving disposition, would not allow him to be called to breakfast. Accordingly, he slept till one o'clock, coming down to lunch with many excuses

for his laziness. After the meal was over, he started for a walk down-town, to look in at the book-stores, and call on Mr. Sproull or Mr. Mansion, if possible, with reference to the continued uncertainty of his mind toward St. Simon's.

If possible ! Wherever he dropped in, there were so many new and interesting things to look over, published since his last visit to town, that, by the time he reached Liberty street, the boys were crying "Evening Post ! Third 'shun !" He bought a copy, and began glancing at it as he continued down Broadway. The third column on the first page was one of religious intelligence, and one of the first paragraphs that there met his eye was the following:—

"It is now definitely understood that the Church of St. Simon Stylites, whose pulpit has for a year been left vacant by the death of the venerable Dr. Lumper, will shortly receive, as its rector, Rev. Jonas Moddle, a recent graduate of the Seminary of Saint Elymas, whose abilities are very highly spoken of."

The effect of such a thing upon a man who had never seen his name in print was like a judge's sentence. People, whose names have often been treated by the press with hyperbole both of scurrilous and laudatory comment, can probably form no idea of the decisive character which a newspaper reference bears to the youthful and uncalloused mind. There was no philosophizing past it. The die was cast. Mr. Moddle belonged to St. Simon's. As a reaction from the first thrill of astonish-

ment at the Post's notice, came to Mr. Moddle a feeling of strange peace.

"It has been settled for me providentially," mused Mr. Moddle. "I am glad I was not left to my own erring judgment. No doubt the Lord has seen a worthier man for the post of conflict and honor at Muddy Creek. I ought to be very humble when I think of it."

In this frame of devotion, humility, and calmness, Mr. Moddle retraced his steps to Mr. Chawsuble's aunt's. Both aunt and nephew had also read the Post, and their congratulations so overpowered him that he was forced to retire upstairs, and compose himself by writing letters; among others, the declinatory one to Binks. This last was a long one, full of the tenderest sympathy, merely stating that he had already accepted the rectorship of St. Simon's, and closing with an earnest invitation to call on him, should Mr. Binks ever come to New York. As he was sealing the letter, Chawsuble came running up to ask whether Mr. Moddle was going back to the seminary with him on that evening's train, or would stay down longer? In the latter case, Mr. Chawsuble's aunt would gladly continue to entertain him; in the former, Mr. Chawsuble would suggest that he pack his valise at once.

"I don't think—I don't know—Chawsuble, I believe that if you'll see to having the janitor pack my things, express my books and clothes, and sell my furniture, I won't go back to St. Elymas at all, till after I'm instituted. I hate good-by's; so, say them you; it doesn't



give the same pang to a proxy. I'll pay a visit there after I get well started in St. Simon's."

"Well, then, I'll attend to the things for you; but you'll leave a hole at St. Elymas,—everybody'll feel sorry. Good-by, if you're sure you wont come along."

"Good-by, Chawsuble; write me in a day or two."

The next day Mr. Sproull called on him, and took him over to a suite of rooms, which had been specially fitted up for him. "The rest of the house is all renovated except paper, polish, and fresco," said Mr. Sproull; "so you wont be disturbed in your study by any din of saws and hammers. Dr. Lumper's old housekeeper has been living here to keep the place; she used to be called a good plain cook; she'll take your orders, and, if you don't like her *cuisine*, why Delmonico's is handy. I believe she has a daughter to wait; but, if not, my wife will select a good housemaid at the intelligence-office."

Mr. Moddle answered that his tastes were simple and easily gratified. Mr. Sproull told him that the institution ceremony, if he were willing, could take place early the following week, shook hands with him, and left him to examine his rooms. They were furnished with critical elegance and extreme luxury of form and color. What most immediately possessed his eye was a little altar of pure white marble, occupying the corner next his bed, surmounted by a richly carved cross of gold and ivory, with a long wax taper in Sévres candlestick on either side,—a vase of flowers, and gorgeous *priedieu* and altar-cloth of scarlet embroidered with heliotropes,

completing its accessories. Attached to the fresh-cut roses in the vase was a card, on which a woman's pen had written these words only, "To my minister." But the heliotropes showed Mr. Moddle, even better than the roses, whose hand had placed the altar and laid the offering on it.

The institution ceremony was a brilliant success. So were the library sermon and the fair. The sermon awakened such a flood of recollections in Mr. Pryng's mind that, wherever he went for a week afterward, it resembled general clearing-up day in a catacomb, whereat bystanders were choked by the mummy-dust of all such greatness as has been embalmed since the day of Jeremy Taylor. Mrs. Mansion's fair, — with beautiful millionairesses for bait, on a back-ground of parti-colored canopy, — was a trap which sprung itself on many opulent middle-aged gentlemen of well-preserved susceptibilities, — never letting them off short of a ten-dollar pen-wiper or a hundred-dollar nightcap, and, in the aggregate, closing on nearly a thousand more than the charming vestry-woman had promised.

The auction was over, and St. Simon's had been the successful bidder for the library. Mr. Moddle was rearranging it the day after, according to his own private plan of reading, when the house-keeper came to tell him that an express-box was waiting for him in the hall. It proved to be his St. Elymas books, forwarded to him by Chawsuble. After opening them and carrying a few armfuls into the library, he came to the family Bible

which used to lie on his St. Elymas centre-table. His face flushed with pleasure at the return of his old friend.

"Oh," he thought, "if I had only had *you* in Chawsuble's room the night of that struggle, best book, I believe I should have made an oracle of you, as in the many past days when I have consulted the *Sortes Biblicæ*!"

He sat down in his dressing-gown at the foot of the stairs, and musingly spread the Bible on his lap. It fell open where Mr. Moddle had deposited his letters on the day of leaving St. Elymas. He put the St. Simon's letter in his pocket, sighed as his eyes fell on sturdy old Binks's crabbed direction, and mechanically glanced to the large clear text which underlay them. It was the first chapter of Jonah and the third verse:—

"But Jonah rose up to flee unto Tarshish from the presence of the Lord."

Mr. Moddle closed the book, laid his chin upon his palm, and for nearly an hour sat looking steadily away through the crimson panes of the hall, then rose, put the letters away tenderly in his *escritoire*, and, after dressing himself, went off to dine with the Mansions.

Mr. Moddle had scarcely got well underway at St. Simon's when the summer vacation closed its doors, and left him to refresh himself until mid-September. He had no lack of places to go to; one of his parishioners had a Hudson River country-seat near Hyde Park; another a cottage at Newport; a third cruised about in his own yacht with a keen instinct of all the coolest and

nicest spots to land at through the hot months. All of these admirers and many more would have been glad of him for a guest. But Mr. and Mrs. Mansion captured him for the season by inviting him to take a trip with them to London, the Grampians, and Snowdon, as one of their family. Mr. Moddle had never been abroad, and the prospect of going under such favorable auspices might never again be open to him. With some hesitation at accepting such munificent hospitality, he joined the party, and reached England in time for the Doncaster. He hesitated again when the subject of attending the races came up; but his good sense showed him the value of the great national sport, and suggested that in all probability nobody would be in waiting on the turf to carry back reports of him to Vermont, where he was born, and where such things were considered horrible. Accompanying the Mansions, whose barouche went early enough for a fine stand, he was pleasantly surprised to see Chawsuble cantering up to them on a handsome gray hack, by the side of a gentleman in cords and tops, with a cutaway of pearl-gray velvet, and mounted on a gamy thoroughbred.

"I saw you nearly an hour ago, and couldn't get to you through the crowd," cried Chawsuble. "My Lord, — let me present some American friends of mine, — Rev. Humphrey Lord Davenport, Mr. and Mrs. Mansion, and the Rev. Mr. Moddle of St. Simon's." The gentleman in cords reined his horse and lifted his hat at one side of the barouche, while Chawsuble rode round to the

other and shook hands with the occupants. The earl was an elegant, though most pronouncedly British man of about forty, and the first peer who had ever enjoyed the honor of a personal introduction either to Mrs. Mansion or her accompanying fellow-citizens. He seemed captivated at once by the American delicacy of Mrs. Mansion's beauty, and immediately entered into a conversation with herself and husband, which absorbed them so thoroughly that Mr. Moddle and his friend were able to have a familiar talk, *sotto voce*, without any appearance of discourtesy. Mr. Moddle learned that Lord Davenport was one of the richest noblemen in England; that Mr. Chawsuble had crossed on the same steamer, and become acquainted with him through having read the service one Sunday in the cabin; that the earl was a most enthusiastic churchman, and before the death of his elder brother, had taken orders; that he still officiated daily in the chapel of his castle in Foxshire; that he made the highest church speeches in Parliament, and rode closest to the hounds, of any peer in the realm. Chawsuble further mentioned, as a point by no means inconsistent with his eminent personal excellence, that he had invited him to go down with him at the end of the session and stay a month. On their return to town the gentlemen exchanged cards, and Mrs. Mansion invited the two horsemen to call where her party were stopping in Russell Square. The invitation was no less promptly availed of than accepted, and during the remainder of their stay in London there were many inter-

changes of courtesy between Lord Davenport and his new acquaintances. Chawsuble frankly acknowledged that he was uncertain whether he should return to America or not. He had only come across for a vacation tour, but was so charmed with some of the men he had fallen in with that he didn't know but he should stay and take whatever place they might find for him. Wouldn't they like to go with him to St. Mary Magdalen's next Sunday morning? This invitation, having been accepted, was followed by visits to Saints Albans, Barnabas, and George in the East. The five Sundays spent in London, before and after the trip to Wales, were devoted to a very thorough study of that grand Ritual Movement which reappears in England about the time of the meteoric shower, lasts somewhat longer, and possesses nearly as much influence over the practical British mind. Mr. Mansion, at first, could make neither head nor tail of much that he saw. He clouded his wife's beauty with pensive reproach for an entire afternoon by asking Chawsuble who was that fat man with so much red on his petticoat, and comparing the intoning to Shakers. When the officiating clergymen crossed themselves, his face assumed a look which quite reminded Mrs. Mansion of Mephistopheles in presence of the same sign, and she had to tell him so before he could be overawed into not making himself conspicuous to the congregation. A few weeks' association with Lord Davenport greatly mollified his manners. Not only was the earl a generous, whole-souled fellow, but a very capable one, — had worn



off by travel that almost Chinese ignorance of the rest of the world which belongs to the native Englishman,—was competent to talk with Mr. Mansion about American finance in a clear, sensible, and captivating way,—and was a peer. If even Thackeray could confess joints where his anti-snob harness was vulnerable by such a personage, let us confess it for Mr. Mansion, as doubtless he would not for himself. Before he left London, Mr. Mansion found himself not only taking St. Mary Magdalen's quite calmly, but even feeling a lively interest in the proposition originating with his wife, that a choir of parish children should be added to their quartette when they got back to St. Simon's, and that these children should be trained and surpliced like those then before them. Through Chawsuble's and the earl's introductions, Mr. Moddle was several times invited to assist both at the chancel and in the pulpit. He acquitted himself in a manner which made the Mansions glow with a pleasant sense of proprietorship in him, and got his eloquence referred to by the London correspondent of the Herald. Thrown constantly in the companionship of the men whom Chawsuble had found so charming, and prompted at every step by beauty and enthusiasm in the very house where he lived, his susceptible nature went fluently into the new moulds, and he returned to New York with ten copies of Keble's *Christian Year* in his trunk, presented by ten several and particular friends, and an advancement of thought upon the sanctity of stoles and candles, compared with



which the state in which he left America was as one burner to the full-orbed chandelier.

To Mrs. Mansion Mr. Moddle owed all the tact by which innovations — or, as they said, restorations — were to be introduced into the worship of St. Simon's. It is but just to him to say that he fully realized this fact and felt abundantly grateful for it. He was wrapt in admiration of that quality of hers which in unsanctified matters is called finesse. How would his clumsy man's hand have managed with those parish children? He confessed to himself that he should probably have poked them all at once in their surplices into the chancel, to have excited the jealousy and suspicion of every impracticable low churchman in the parish. But how adroitly *she* began by enlisting the parents who populated the Sunday school to join her in a plan for having their children taught sacred music upon two week-day afternoons; and how skilfully she got one after another of the babies into a chorister's gown, first as a reward of merit, then on the plea of uniformity! What a pretty little Christmas entertainment and what a pretty little enthusiasm she got up, when they all sang carols in snowy lawn, — affecting Mr. Pryng to that degree that he shed tears, and, being unable to recollect anything at the time he came on earth which they reminded him of, finally fell back upon "cherubim"! How wonderful also was it to see Mr. Carmine rising to express his delight at the festival, and proposing the very thing most at Mrs. Mansion's heart, though she had never given

him a hint of it in words, that this lovely choir be promoted to a place in the chancel and take part in the services of the church !

To Mrs. Mansion was due all the praise of that ingenuity which first presented several square feet of Salvati's handsomest work in mosaics to the church, and then had it inserted in the ecclesiastical East as a brilliant illustration to the creed and the commandments, thus making a background against which the subsequent rich altar-cloth and vivid bouquets did not stand in such startling contrast to stumble weak believers, as they would have done against the plain old panelling of cream and gilt. These are but a few of the instances in which that able and devoted young apostle, Mr. Moddle, was mainly succored and entirely steered by the beautiful diplomatist, who had such an influence over men because she comprehended them. He felt, as most men enjoying such aid and direction would have felt, something very like worship for the giver. Her presence was a pleasant spell ; she lighted him always like a lamp of success ; she was so womanly that she could be admired to the full without the sentiment degenerating into awe, though her perception of an end and the ways to it, her wise yet dauntless manner of pursuing those ways, might have got that poorer grade of applause, if witnessed in a man and a general.

When the Lenten humiliation succeeded the festivities of Christmas, Mr. Moddle preached his celebrated Ash-Wednesday sermon, upon the text, "Confess ye your

sins," and concluded by inviting any sheep of his fold, whose minds, at this penitential season, were burdened with the memory of transgression, to come and talk with their true and loving shepherd in the rectory of St. Simon's. His invitation was accepted by half a dozen during the first week in Lent; one of them a gentleman who had defrauded the revenue department; the others, people who lived unhappily in their families, and more because they desired a confidant than because they felt themselves to blame, came to let their sorrows gush into the bosom of their pastor. What with daily morning and evening prayers, two sermons on Sunday, and the Wednesday and Friday evening lectures, Mr. Moddle had his time so occupied that other burdened souls called and missed him. To meet the cases of all and economize his own leisure, Mr. Moddle, during the remaining week, set apart a couple of hours on Tuesday and Saturday afternoons, and announced from the altar that he would meet the burdened then.

At the outset he had no idea of the training which he was preparing for himself, — a training of revelation, astonishment, and consternation. As his penitential sessions became better attended, he had a hard fight not to become sceptical regarding the existence of any genuine goodness in the world at all. So many wives and husbands, who to mankind seemed models of conjugal felicity in the light of Mr. Moddle's better information became haggard wretches with aching hearts, sitting hard on nature's safety-valves for the sake of soci-

ety, and tremulously expecting their rust-eaten relation to explode beneath them. So many respectable families contained one irreclaimable drunkard, and some of those drunkards were women. Such scandals of dishonesty, hushed up on 'Change, came to Mr. Moddle's ear from the lips of their socially unblemished perpetrators, that the Scriptures seemed reversed ; what was only whispered in the market-place was proclaimed in his closet. Large need that closet be which invites any average body of people to unpack in it the skeletons from their own ! Mr. Moddle seemed to have been suddenly taken round upon the wrong side of the pattern of creation. Sometimes his brain almost reeled as he asked himself whether all the beauty of the universe were only skin-deep. This private dejection, modified by the necessities of the pulpit, became a public pensiveness which sat well upon the youthful divine, and caused the pathos of his sermons to be much remarked upon. All this was well enough during Lent, but whence was he to expect his Easter inspirations ?

The last Saturday of the mournful season came, and with it a succession of the burdened. A number of ladies visited the rectory for the fourth time, — having experienced such relief of mind from their earlier confidences that they fell into the way of clearing their consciences at shorter periods, so as to keep their average burden habitually bearable. This arrangement redounded less to economy of time than the sanguine might have supposed, for although the burden which had

to be unpacked at any one time was not so great as it would have been if left longer, it consisted of much smaller minutiae, and Mr. Moddle had frequently to restore peace of mind to lambs of his fold who had forgotten to cross themselves in the creed because they were thinking of their next neighbor's Cashmere.

He had dismissed several such cases of conscience with the absolution which the church understands to belong to people being penitent, and had become slightly weary, when a light tap on the door of the rectory study announced Mrs. Mansion. Her very presence was a sort of rest to him. Her voice was so soft, her expression so appreciative, her beauty something so exquisite to dwell on.

"Ah me!" thought Mr. Moddle: "it is I, who ought to confess to that calm, all powerful loveliness, — not that to me! To me, — me, getting worldly and sceptical! Ah, if she knew! How do you do, Mrs. Mansion?"

The last sentence he spoke aloud, rising from his study-chair to meet the lady with a cordial hand.

The thought escaped her as little as the speech. Though she did not doubt his cordiality, she saw that his good spirits were assumed.

"You are not feeling well to-day," she said, anxiously.

"Only a little tired, that's all," replied Mr. Moddle, cheerily, sitting down by her side upon the sofa.

"You look so sad, lately. The other night some one remarked it at our house, and Mr. Pryng highly com-

mended you, saying that by good rights a churchman should always be sorrowful at this season. I thought, but I did not say, that the man in you seemed to be sorrowing no less than the churchman. You know who your friends are, and where to come in any personal trial. Are you — ill, Mr. Moddle? Why wont you see Dr. Bayard? Let me give you a note to him."

"Oh, no! You're very kind, but I'm not ill, and as to knowing my friends, how could I ever forget them? How is Mr. Mansion?"

"As well as usual, thank you. By the way, he was the very person who remarked on your sadness. After the visitors were gone, he told me he thought he understood it, — you were in love; and he asked me if I supposed the young lady was Miss Brooks."

"What did you tell him?" exclaimed Mr. Moddle, crimsoning to the temple.

"That I had never esteemed myself worthy enough of being your confidante to ask the question."

"I give you full leave to state that there is nothing in the idea, whatever. Miss Brooks is a sweet girl, but neither of us ever dreamed of marrying the other."

"I wish only that I knew enough of what troubles you to help it somehow," said Mrs. Mansion, looking with eyes of womanly anxiety into her minister's youthful and fair, but weary face.

"It's no secret from you," said the young man, gratefully. "It's only those mental conflicts through which we must all pass sometimes. The Practical and the



Ideal must have a stand-up fight in everybody's nature, I suppose, at least, once a fortnight."

"Conflicts?" she answered. "You are too tired to talk of such things. I won't weary you with mine. You have surely won from all my sex your respite for the remainder of the afternoon."

She arose and brought a cushion from the arm-chair across the room, which she quietly tucked behind his shoulders, with the air of one who did no service.

"There! rest now; and let us talk of something soothing. Do you know the children have their Easter hymns beautifully; and apropos of the season, here's a little basket of trailing arbutus which I selected for you from a box sent me by cousins in Chemung."

The subtle, dreamy fragrance of the lovely pink and white buds, which Mrs. Mansion drew from her muff, seemed even more expressive of herself than the heliotrope. When he thanked her for them he looked her in the face, and could not help thinking that its loveliness was more like that of some marvellous vision than any common thing on earth. He would not let her plead his weariness for him. What sorrowed her? He clasped her by both hands, and, with the frank enthusiasm of youth, begged her to open her heart to him.

"I am not weary when I can help you," he said. "To whom should the lamb flee save to the shepherd?"

"May one be pardoned and retain the offence?" asked Mrs. Mansion, gazing into his face with a sadness which spoke more than his youth could know. "I must



confess more than common penitents. I must confess that I am *impenitent*. If I sin, I love my sin. It may be a dreadful thing to say; but I do ! oh, I do ! ” repeated Mrs. Mansion, in that intensest of feminine emphases, a low voice.

She bowed her head on her hand; but it fell on Mr. Moddle’s shoulder as gently as if she had been a child.

“ The Scriptures and the church both represent life as a terrible struggle,” continued he, soothingly. She had put her handkerchief to her eyes, and he knew that she was weeping, though she did not sob aloud. “ I know that in times of temptation it is often hard to say which side we stand on, — Good or Evil, — but ” —

“ And do *you* ever have any temptations ? ” asked she, looking up into his face with tender amazement. “ You so good and lovely, — so like one’s ideal of the beloved John ? ”

“ Don’t say so,” said the minister, sadly. “ I am a man, — that means doubt and weakness. But we always have this sure sign, I think, of our condition. We know we have passed from death unto life if we love the brethren. Now, do you not find encouragement in the ardor with which you love the church, and work for it ? ”

“ What if I had found my idol in the church ? ” said she.

“ In the church ? ”

“ *In its rector,* ” she answered.

Her bonnet had fallen upon her neck. Her hair on one side becoming unfastened fell across his knee,

turned into a shower of burning gold by the beam of setting sunlight which fell aslant through the windows of the rectory. To the young man's bewildered gaze she looked like an Angel of Annunciation out of some dream of Titian.

He gently laid his hand upon her shoulder and drew her face toward his.

"Sweet, wise, beautiful counsellor and comfort!" spoke he, "what shall I say to you?"

Again she lifted her sweet eyes to his, and, drawing down his lips to hers, kissed them.

"You have made me," she said, faintly. "You would have me confess." And she did not take away her face.

A tap on the study-door brought Mr. Moddle to his feet.

Answering it, he found only Mr. Binks, of Muddy Creek, who had been shown the way by the servant; then left to announce himself as standing there in acceptance of Mr. Moddle's former invitation.

Only holding parley with him as long as it took Mrs. Mansion to walk away from the sofa to the farther window, Mr. Moddle was obliged to introduce him into the study. Few people who looked at old Binks could have proposed holding interviews with him in an entry. He was not much of an ante-room subject, wasn't old Binks.

Clad in a suit of butternut homespun, unusually fine in texture and modestly dark in shade, holding in one

hand not the slouch indigenous to his section, but a beaver which had graced all his complimentary occasions since the Harrison campaign, and in the other a glove three sizes too large for him, which he now and then made furtive pretence of wearing, by inserting in it, experimentally, a finger at a time, — this was the outer rind of Mr. Binks.

The next was a vigorous and sinewy body, slightly stooped by life's work; a finely-shaped head large about the crown, — the temples and the back covered with thick grizzled hair, worn long; a mustache whose gray was still broadly lined with flaxen; a pair of eyes singularly kind and honest, but wondrously mobile and penetrating; a prominent Roman nose, a strong jaw, but a mouth, which, when it spoke, revealed teeth as white and smile as winning as a little child's.

As to the inmost core of Binks — but to Heaven alone belongs the judgment of all true, loyal, manly fellows!

The entirety of these impressions put out his hand frankly to Mr. Moddle; and as the clear, pleasant eyes met his, the young minister somehow felt refreshed as if a cool wind blew on him.

As he stood explaining who he was, Mr. Binks's blue eyes glanced past the door at Mrs. Mansion. He put the Harrisonian beaver to his breast, and, bowing with the grace of a cavalier, said, —

“No, — I beg pardon, — I wouldn't think, raly, of interrupting you if ye're having a private conversation.”

Mr. Moddle looked toward Mrs. Mansion, but she

studiously gazed out of the window into the ivy on the walls.

"Mrs. Mansion," spoke Mr. Moddle, hesitating, "may I introduce to you an old friend and correspondent of mine, Mr. Robert Binks, of — of Missouri?"

She turned quickly from the window, and, repressing an indescribable look of grief and scorn, became wholly the self-controlled woman, as she bowed to Mr. Binks with the gracious sweetness of some popularly beloved duchess, and welcomed him by saying that to meet any friend of Mr. Moddle's was always a delight to those who had been his oldest and truest friends in St. Simon's. She talked with him long enough about himself and his journey to make any man feel at ease in the presence of a splendid woman, and pave the way for excusing herself without seeming to have suffered an interruption. Then she looked up charmingly at Mr. Moddle, and said, "I believe I've said all I can say; if I stay longer, I shall be late at dinner. Come to see us with Mr. Moddle, Mr. Binks. Good-afternoon, gentlemen."

Mr. Binks took a seat, while Mr. Moddle saw Mrs. Mansion to the door. He followed her silently downstairs. At its foot she turned round, laid her head upon his bosom, and looked imploringly into his face.

"O my own — my beautiful Saint John!" — she spoke in a tremulous whisper, — "you are my worship, my priest! Can you not speak peace to me?"

Again her soft arms drew down his neck, and he answered, as out of a mist, "God be merciful to us sinners!"

"Can he be merciful to you, and not have pity on me?" she moaned, with her lips pressed against his cheek, clasping him fiercely as despair, yet passionately as possession.

He seemed to be dreaming her into his life, when a soft piping from above revealed that Mr. Binks had found the parlor organ, and was practising, to the tune of "Mornington," the confirmation hymn, "Soldiers of Christ, arise!"

Mr. Moddle passed his hand over his eyes like one just waking. He turned the knob; he clasped the beautiful wrist resting on his shoulder, and made entreaty toward the open door.

"Go!" He spoke hurriedly, not daring to risk his eyes with her own. "Quick — for God's sake — while I feel so!"

She read his face, and, dropping her veil, passed quietly out of the rectory.

Mr. Moddle, having stood for several minutes to compose his breath which was like that of a man who has overrun himself, returned upstairs.

"As you see, I've taken the freedom of trying your melodeon," said Mr. Binks. "My daughter plays ours at home and in the church; and sometimes, with the latter, in bad weather, I spell her a leetle. Powerful fine instrument this! How she speaks! But I don't rightly understand those square sorter par'sol handles, that shove in 'n out to both sides of the key-board. You're not feeling in very good health, I'm afeard, sir,"

added Mr. Binks, with a look of kindly solicitude in his eyes, and a frank clasp of the young man's feverish hand.

"No; I'm a little overworked, Mr. Binks."

"And not enough in the open air," said Mr. Binks. "Ah, that's bad! If you could only run out for a vacation with me, now. It isn't to the end o' deer-hunting yet, and you kin call pe-rairie hens *prime*. What with that and rabbits and other small game, we could keep you in all the exercise you wanted till July. Then you could go out into the buffalo region as far as White Rock Creek in Kansas, where I'm a goin' myself, having some lands to locate, Lord willin'. You look as if it'd do you good; but, situated as *you* are," said Mr. Binks, glancing around the gorgeous library with honest admiration, "I suppose the idee's impossible."

A sudden inspiration flashed upon Mr. Moddle, and he answered, —

"Not so impossible, perhaps, as you think."

"No?" said Mr. Binks. "It does me good, right smart, to hear ye say so! I'd like to have you a kinder survey that field. My heart's somehow sot on that idee. Even while you stayed rector here, you could help us all the better for havin' seen us and known us. You'd be right in the way of all the fust sort of young men as went into the ministry, and, when a good man for us came along,—as you might judge by havin' taken our measure,—why, you could ask him to come and look at us, too, my dear sir. We're in fearful need of a first-class man at Muddy,"—Mr. Binks waxed warm



with enthusiasm, and wiped his brow with a soft, large bandanna,—“in fearful need, Mr. Moddle; and it’s in my heart to believe the Lord’s a-goin’ to send him!”

Mr. Moddle sat for a few moments silently by his guest’s side upon the sofa. Must he go away? Must he *not* go away? Was he safe in St. Simon’s church? Was St. Simon’s church safe with him in it? He be-thought himself of his old questionings at Chawsuble’s aunt’s; his mind by association reverted to the “*Sortes Biblicæ*,” and, glancing up, he beheld the old family Bible lying on his stand. Half-ashamed, as of leaning to the weakness of necromancy, yet in desperate stress as to his future course, he arose and opened this great volume for the first time since the commencement of Lenten exercises. Again its leaves parted where Binks’s letter was left, and again had the Rev. Jonas Moddle to read from the prophecy of his namesake.

These were the passages which his eye fell on,—

“But the Lord sent out a great wind into the sea, and there was a mighty tempest in the sea, so that the ship was like to be broken.”

Then, just across into the parallel column,—

“So they took up Jonah, and cast him forth into the sea, and the sea ceased from her raging.”

Mr. Moddle, almost foundered in his tempest, looked up from the text at his guest.

“Have you still no minister, Mr. Binks?”

“We air as we weer,” said the old Missourian, sadly.

“Mr. Binks, if your invitation still holds good, I *will*



go out as you say, to give a kind of survey to your field. Mr. Binks, in confidence, I confess to you that I'm not sure but my acceptance of this rectorship was altogether wrong. I mean to resign here. I will go with you if you want me."

"My dear sir, do you think how much you're promising?" exclaimed Mr. Binks, with honest astonishment.

"I have thought of everything, Mr. Binks. I have weighed self and others, and found the difference between these two objects of living as great as that between the death and the life of the soul."

"It was thoughts like them which warmed my heart, the day I writ of, when I heerd you in the white church," said the old man, sympathetically.

"I have concluded upon my course without taking guidance of any lamp but duty. I will go with you, Mr. Binks."

"Well, sir, I see ye're solemn earnest, and I mayn't dispute your view of duty, but my conscience wont be quit," said Mr. Binks, looking around the beautiful room, with those same honest eyes which had ever scorned to depreciate his seller's animal in the horse-market. "My conscience wont be quit, not unless I say, this here is a powerful sight to leave!"

"I realize its attraction perfectly, and I am willing to give it all up for the right I see."

"Well, then, God bless you, Reverend Jonas Moddle! I'll never keep you to your promise, mind,—for men don't want bonds in the Lord's work,—but if you *do*

hold to it, on conseedering, I'll be unto your side as was Hur unto Moses, and prop your elbows from sun-up to sun-down ! ”

For a few moments the two stood clasping hands silently; then Mr. Moddle said, —

“ You were talking about exercise. You'll stay and dine with me, of course. Would you like to take a little walk with me before ? If you're not tired — I've not been out to-day.”

“ Tired ? ” said Mr. Binks, as if he indistinctly remembered to have heard the word, and were trying to associate it with some idea. “ Come ahead ! I don't feel as if I'd been out-doors for a week. I was up from the Astor house to Union square a few times to-day ; but bless me, that isn't gettin' out of the house ! It's houses everywhere — it's bein' in the house multiplied by five miles long. I'd walk smart if I could get to a little easy breathin' distance out o' sight o' fences. I'll go where you like, and we can talk as we go.”

Mr. Moddle put on his hat and overcoat, with the intention of going to his own surgeon, for an examination and a certificate, stating that his nervous system seemed too exhausted to permit of his sustaining longer such responsibilities and labors as were incumbent upon the Rector of St. Simon's.

But after he should have enclosed this with his resignation, the vestry would be entitled to at least a week's notice, and during the time he must stay in the rectory, and be accessible as the official head of St. Simon's.

How should he meet the torrent of remonstrances, the questioning letters, the calls of astonishment, the whole battery of subtler influences which in that period would surely be brought to bear against him ?

Pondering the inextricable, inexplicable problem of his fate, Mr. Moddle made rather a silent companion, as he walked arm-in-arm with Mr. Binks up Madison avenue, ever and anon returning to himself to make suggestions or answer questions as to houses and their occupants.

“ Who lives there ? ” said Mr. Binks, pointing to what the newspapers call a brown stone palace, on the corner above.

“ That’s the house of Mrs. Duverney, a widow of wealth, who has two children, a daughter and a son. Both the ladies have been devoted attendants on my ministrations, but the young man is bitterly prejudiced. He has fought both his mother and his sister upon every act of kindness shown me. I was told by a lady friend that he had openly vilified me in society, accused me of being a Jesuit, and charged me with every scandal of the confessional.”

“ What did you do when you heard that ? ”

“ I went on my way. The young man is not worth noticing; he is a wild, maniacal fellow, of uncontrollable passions, but most generally drunk, which seems, in his case, to act as a sedative. I believe he is coming down the steps now. Yes, and drunk as usual. I’m sorry for them all to see him go on so, for there’s lunacy in the family.”

The street-light fell on Mr. Moddle's face and that of the person coming down the steps just as they both reached their foot. The young man gave an ugly look, and stumbled against Mr. Moddle, partly from surprise, partly of intention.

"You're the soft-handed fellow," broke forth the offender, in a hoarse, uncertain voice, "who plays old woman in gowns and petticoats behind the chancel, to make the young women take you for what you look, and unpack their gossip in the study to you—Holy Father!"

The intense insult of the tone with which he spoke the last words was followed by no immediate violence of action. Mr. Moddle was for stopping to return stern denial, but Mr. Binks persuaded him on by reminding that the wise man never struck a drunken man or argued with a fool.

Mr. Duverney's impetus carried him nearly across the sidewalk, but he recovered himself with an "ugh" of befuddled perplexity, and began following, semi-consciously, the direction taken by the rector.

The two walked quite briskly, and for a while kept widening the distance between them and Mr. Duverney. Before five blocks were passed, however, that gentleman, brooding on his grudge against the world that had produced a Moddle and laid sidewalks zigzag, had become still drunker than when he sallied forth; so that in fact he found himself obliged to run, in order that he might maintain impetus enough to keep him perpendicular

This rate of motion soon brought him up rapidly to Mr. Moddle. As the latter, hearing him, drew out from the wall to let him pass, Duverney's eye again caught him, and another spasm of hatred concentrated all his force into his heavy cane, which he brought on the back of Mr. Moddle's head with his entire force as he rushed by. The young rector fell senseless into Mr. Binks's arms, and no policeman being within reach until the old man had tenderly disposed of that burden, the drunken bully escaped.

Mr. Binks stopped the first passer, and sent him for a carriage, in which he at once took Mr. Moddle back to the rectory.

Mr. Moddle's experience was almost painless. It began with a dull sound, and a coruscation of the entire surrounding atmosphere; this was followed by blank darkness. Now and then the darkness would part for an interval whose length he could not measure, and the faces of the Mansions, with various members of his flock besides, would peer at him out of a mist whose invariable background was the kind, honest face of old Binks. Then came a period of confused dreams,—of strange masses forever changing as to their outward form, but inwardly always cavernous, and immuring in their silent vastness Mr. Moddle himself. At last there came a fissure in the immeasurable blank; the beam of glad white light that slanted in slowly broadened; he reached forward to it; he struggled, and, with a great throe, blackness and death brought him forth into

life and the sun. He tried to lift his head, for he half saw Binks reading by his table; but he could only manage to give a little cry, like a waking baby. Binks rose and came to him noiselessly, but with features that could not repress their delight.

"Thank God!" said Binks, in a low voice. "Thank him! I'm always havin' to thank him for something, and I do thank him now."

When he was able to hear it, Mr. Moddle learned that Mr. Binks had been watching by his bedside for six weeks; that he himself had suffered brain fever from concussion, although the skull was not fractured; and that there had been times when the doctor considered it very uncertain whether he would pull through.

One of the first recollections which flashed upon him, on his return to consciousness, was his struggle upon the question of St. Simon's rectorship,—how to give that up, without bringing down upon him such a demand for his inmost reasons as he could not, would not answer; and how, not answering, to preserve intact his reputation for strength of character, reasonableness, and probity. Somehow, in his weakness, this question did not seem to trouble him as much as it normally should, when he asked Binks, faintly,—

"What is there left for me to do now?"

"My dear boy!" said Binks, tenderly, sinking the professional, and falling back on the human relation, "you've nothing to bother ye now! Just get well, d'ye see! You attend to that, and everything'll fall in straight afterward."



"Did you tell them who did it?"

"I told 'em no such thing; for I heerd you say the matter was delicate. If you hadn't pulled through, I suppose I'd have had to tell 'em. But you did pull through, d'ye see, and so they left it at "rowdies." I never see a horse that I couldn't tell anywhere if I see him ag'in; and I suppose I could tell that man Duverney; but I didn't want to make that row, d'ye see? Now you've identified yourself ag'in, so to speak, — got your hand right onto yerself, so you know where it is, and I reckon there wont be no need o' no other identifyin'. And *i-den-ti-fyin'*" (Mr. Binks made a solemn pause between his syllables to indicate the weightiness of the act) "is a right mean and sorrowful business. I done it once, when Judge Lynch sot on a bushwhacker, and I'd rather give my best gain-twist than do it ag'in; for hangin' and sich goes ag'in me smart!"

The rector clasped his wan hands, and thanked God that the ship of St. Simon's had not, through his being in it, foundered under the scandal which he feared.

"Can I go with you, Binks?" he added, after a few moments, in the plaintive voice of a little lost child asking to be taken home.

"That you can, certain," replied Binks. "This isn't the time to hold ye to nothin'; and when ye feel better, ye'll remember I said how it wasn't in me to hold ye. But if you care to go out to Muddy along'ith me, why we kin hev a vacation, and git all right, an' see what we'll do next. There's nothin' to stop ye; ye're not *correlled* anywhere, my dear boy!"



"But what will *they* think?"

"They've heerd you. You don't remember, I suppose, how many times you've said you couldn't stay here; you must get right up and go to Missouri. Mr. and Mrs. Mansion heerd it. There was a large gentleman in, with a reg'ler towel round his neck, who heerd it, and said it reminded him of Paul and the Macedonian cry. Then there was others that heerd it. But you told Mrs. Mansion and me plain one night that you done wrong in coming to St. Simon's, and was a-goin' to Muddy right as soon as ye got up on elbow. We knew that was on'y dreamin', and didn't count nothin' on it, my dear boy; but it's left so you kin do anythin' you're a mind to."

"I'm glad you didn't tell them about Duverney."

"Well, I like to go easy where I do'no my way."

"You remember my reading Jonah to you? It's almost—ah!—last thing *I* remember. Do you know, 'tseems to me that I could not only forgive, but thank Duverney?"

"Well, I do'no. I reckon I could forgive him, at a pinch, but I'm afeard it'd come hefty on me, not a kinder to relieve Adam, if I saw him, by takin' a crack at him."

"No, Binks, don't even feel *that* way. I spoke of reading Jonah, because, d'ye know, it seems to me (I may be light-headed from so much sickness) as if I were Jonah, and Duverney were the whale? He bolted me right into darkness. But how should I ever

have got away from St. Simon's, if it hadn't been for him? And I *must* get away from St. Simon's."

Old Binks smoothed down the young man's soft, brown hair, and hushed him, for a moment, as he would his own child, then said, soothingly, —

"Well, you shall git away; and there wont be no blame, neither. I heerd the Mansions talk together, — cryin' as they spoke, — and say as how they'd put too much anxiety and labor on the shoulders of a young man of devoted piety and noble genius. The words which they used was these," said Mr. Binks, pausing to see if he had stated the expression at once with becoming force and literalness.

"Then," continued Mr. Binks, "you told 'em to stop cryin'."

"It seems to me I remember something like that," said Mr. Moddle, mistily.

"And they answered you that they'd help you to do whatever you thought right; and they both stooped down and kissed you."

"Mr. Mansion, too?"

"Him too," said Mr. Binks, gravely.

"It seems to me I remember that now," replied Mr. Moddle, smiling faintly for the first time since he recovered his consciousness.

He was quietly nursed, and, by his physician's order, little visited for another week in his bedroom at the rectory. Then he quietly went off by boat, one evening, with Binks alone; and the envelope, which enclosed

the doctor's certificate and resignation, to be handed by Mr. Mansion, *in propria forma*, to an already informally advised vestry, was postmarked Muddy Creek.

In Mr. Moddle's after life Duvern y was seldom referred to between himself and Mr. Binks. But, when his mention was necessary, he was always spoken of smilingly, and as "the Whale."

## III.

THE Parish of Muddy Creek was all that fancy painted it. Nor was there an atom of surcharged color in the brush of the Rev. Joseph Bowers. Piety, like the fruitful vine, did not thrive well on first-bottom land, though, morally speaking, a looser soil was difficult to find. Back on the bluffs, and the high-rolling prairie, Mr. Moddle came now and then upon some untended and untrellised saint, whose rich clusters of goodness were none the less refreshing that they grew on a seedling stock instead of a layer from some old ecclesiastical vineyard,—a stock which had lost no individuality by cutting and tying to anybody's stake.

Mr. Moddle's parish, from Muddy to Plum Creek and Old Woman's Rancho to Pea-Soup Flats, was an area of about twenty miles square. All hunting up the stray sheep of his corral had to be done, like his neighbors', in the saddle. The frame of mind in which Mr. Moddle, as to the natural man, regarded that animal, the horse, was, like that of most men trained in schools of abstruse theologic study, a reminiscence of that terrible beast in the psalms, who must be held in with bit and bridle lest he come nigh unto thee. Let us not dwell upon the discipline by which he was converted from this view,—the

lameness of leg, the stitches in side, the aërial vaultings, owing to a dim conception that his animal might be ten feet high, by which the new rector of Muddy, like ambition, o'erleaped his selle, and came down on the other side. He had never in his life before known what it was to be laughed at. Of that cheap, but unattractive, novelty he now had overmuch. As he rode—often, properly speaking, as his beast bore him captive—through that yellow quagmire flanked by straggling, dingy houses, which constituted the Muddy settlement's sole claim to a street, derisive greetings daily met his efforts to learn that noble art whose graces witch the world. At the court-house corner, at the door of the rum-and-poker den, the store, the justice's of the peace, he was asked if his knees never knocked his teeth out, and why he did not hitch a crank to his elbows, and let himself out for a horse-power, with numerous other questions of that nature, which Artemus\* characterizes as "suttle goakin." Still he pluckily stuck to his training, and, by midsummer, had not only gained twenty pounds in weight, as well as a vigor and a color to which he was heretofore a stranger, but rode so well that nobody paid the least attention to him. West of the Mississippi, a man must ride badly to attract notice; and, in every direction from that river, the world is only on the *qui vive* when it finds something to censure.

As had originally been proposed, Mr. Moddle became

\* Since this was written, alas ! too soon immortal !

an inmate of Mr. Binks's house. The plantation — more accurately the ranche, for it was but partially enclosed, and chiefly devoted to grazing purposes — covered three thousand acres of bottom and high prairie, a couple of miles from the settlement. Just under the shelter of the bluff, surrounded by a grove of elms and oaks, with a pretty view of the serpentine creek, and its fringe of cotton-woods, stood Mr. Binks's house, a structure which recorded in itself all the successive phases of progress through which Missouri architecture has passed since the day of Pike and the earlier Chouteaus. The first phase was represented by a good-sized wing of squared cotton-woods chinked in with mortar; the following ones by more ambitious structures of frame, batten, and clap-board, — two stories high, and wandering in every direction, as if they had started in life with some dissipated idea of being bowling-alleys, or a mercantile tendency to become rope-walks, but finally, under Binks's persuasion, settled down to domestic bliss and the sober actualities of life. Nothing, in all their labyrinth of L's and lean-to's, would Binks permit ever to be touched by a reconstructive hand. He had a good staircase to his loft; but the rude old ladder, which had been its first access, was still his favorite means of ascent, and he would have pulled it down no sooner than his king-post. Every round of it had been touched by dear feet, which would walk with him no more in any of the world's places; and he had never forgotten the sweet face which used to peer from its top above the level of

the loft floor, like a curly-headed sun rising over a cotton-wood horizon, to wake him into home and love from the buffalo-ropes under which he lay asleep after a night-hunt in the deer covers. Many a year ago, that face grew cold, and was laid under the wavy blue grass; but Binks, though he needed no reminder of its vanished beauty, had one always before him in his playmate, his housewife, his joy and darling, his only child, Susie.

She was just twenty years old. Her eyes were large, and of a tender dark-blue. Her features, without being entirely regular, were full of spirit and delicacy; her color, a pure, lustrous blending of olive and rose. Her figure—just above woman's middle height—was round, erect, and lithe as a young huntress, and her hair, which fell in a profusion of curls upon her shoulders, was a soft, lustrous mass, black like the raven's wing. Many rural beauties disenchant admiration when they speak; but Susie's voice revealed a depth of womanly sweetness, kindness, and truth which were no disappointment to any man who had said, "What a lovely mouth!" when it was silent. She sang like a bird, as cheerily, as deliciously, as untaught. She played the melodeon well enough to lead the chants in Muddy; from some old books, which had belonged to her mother, she had learned enough French not to be puzzled when she crossed a quotation in her English reading. She kept herself *au courant* in the best modern literature, and had an enthusiastic appreciation of everything beautiful in the nature around her, or in the art she had only heard



and dreamed of; there was not a subject which calls for the housewife's planning brain, overseeing eye, or skilful hand in which she was not perfectly at home. These accomplishments would have gone but very little way in the latitude of St. Simon Stylites; at Muddy they were precious. And Susie, moreover, had that disposition for whose value society has no limiting horizon; there being no place on earth where a spirit of unwearyed womanly helpfulness like Susie's must not sooner or later be found the best and most enduring thing of all — the thing after every trial of time and circumstance most in demand for the use and the ornament of life.

If Mr. Moddle missed the luxury of St. Simon's library and the atmosphere of culture which belongs to the highest circles of metropolitan society, — if he found his professional work for the most part up-hill, and often returned from his long parochial rides or laborious and ill-attended services not only worn out with bodily fatigue but suffering still more than the average dejection belonging to every youthful enthusiast who starts forth to evangelize the world, and discovers how little it cares to be evangelized, — he found at Binks's two abundant compensations for every discouragement and disaster. For the first time since he lost his parents and went away to boarding-school, he had a home. Before the wild pecans got ripe and the cotton-wood leaves grew sere, he learned the further fact that he had a heart, and that was Susie's.

We must pass over a period of two years, and return to Mr. Binks's house to find it a nursery. There is a little girl in Mr. Binks's house. Her age is ten months, and her name is Daisy Moddle. She was baptized by that name in the Church of St. John the Beloved (locally speaking, in the court-house—the church that met there was so small a one that we forgot to mention its saint before), and had justified her name ever since by being the eye of day to every heart that knew her, from her old black mammy to Binks himself, who found her the image of both his Susies, and almost sang a “*nunc dimittis*” like Simeon's when she was first put into his arms. I neither can, nor need, say what she was to her mother. To her father she was an angel of unsealing, who came straight from heaven to touch all that had been rock or desert in him, and make his heart's inmost fountains gush forth with singing. When he sat writing his sermons, mother and baby must always be in the room with him. Inspiration flagged the moment that he looked up from his desk and found them gone. When he got in jaded and splashed from some long ride; when he returned from ministering to some ruined victim of the still and the gambling-table, soothing some tortured wretch on his death-bed with delirium tremens, or burying men who had murdered each other in a fight across a cock-pit; when day followed day with scarcely a visible reward for those earnest labors to which, in his boyhood, he had looked forward as the inevitable purchase of some great, concrete triumph, dejection never froze

so deep in his heart that his baby's smile could not thaw it out again.

Mr. Moddle had preached good, faithful sermons twice on every Sunday since he came to Muddy save the three included in his buffalo-hunt on the Republican; he had held weekly services whenever it was demanded by the calendar of the church and possible to the roads of Missouri. He had frequently exchanged pulpits with the Rev. Joseph Bowers, and, wherever he preached,—in his own parish or out of it,—was regarded an able, self-denying, and zealous minister. A man approved of all the churches, however, is not necessarily one who answers the other apostolic idea, and commends himself to all them that are without. Mr. Moddle had every man's respect; but it could scarcely be expected of youth's small stock of experience that he should make all men understand or all men like him. He did not fill up the church rapidly. To be sure, in that part of Missouri, few ministers did. A great many of the rough characters of the settlement, now and then a stranger from some other "section," would drop in, drawn by curiosity to see what the service was like, or by the rector's growing reputation for preaching busters, which is the Missourian for pulpit eloquence. The curiosity satisfied and the reputation criticised, these visitors generally returned no more. The faithful few, who, with Binks at their head, had kept their lamps burning through the religious midnight of Muddy, stuck it out bravely still,—the women more especially,—and suffered from no declension.

Mr. Moddle had for several days been sorely lamenting the condition of Zion, when, on a certain morning in June, several wagon-loads of singular-looking people, followed by several wagon-loads more of equally singular-looking baggage, drove into the Muddy settlement "from up St. Louis way," just as Mr. Moddle came out of the post-office with his letters.

A small darkey, whose notions of raiment were limited to one coffee-sack and a hole to stick the head out,—having a more particular eye to the luggage, since childhood must see strange men enough every day,—remarked that the visitors were a circus; and, at first, Mr. Moddle was inclined to agree with him.

It was not long before both were undeceived. The singular-looking people drove to no tavern, but went straight, as by prearrangement, to an open, amphitheatrical spot, under the bluff, where they speedily set doubt at rest upon the nature of their baggage, by pitching it, in the shape of tents, on the sun-dried grass. But these tents had nothing either martial or histrionic about them. They bore no flags nor party-colored canopies. Their nearest approach to ornament were the large placards which were immediately hoisted high upon their sides, while several of the strange-comers went out along the street of the settlement, to distribute reduced copies of the same, to every one they met. These placards read variously, but a good idea of them may be formed from this selection:

"Come to Jesus!" "Now's the accepted time!"

"Camp-meeting every day and evening this week on Nodoway Flat."

A shiver of inexpressible disgust passed through Mr. Moddle. "A camp-meeting!" To him the idea had all his life-long been synonymous with superstition, credulity, and spasms. He hurried to the tie-post of the tavern, where he had left his horse, and got quickly into the saddle, to be beyond the reach of fanatics, repellant to every intellectual fibre of his religious nature. As he rode out of the inn-yard, one of the new-comers stretched out a card to him.

"No, sir!" replied Mr. Moddle, "I totally disapprove of the whole thing."

"If God agrees with you, we shall fail," said the man, gravely.

Mr. Moddle bowed, in stern conclusion of the interview, and rode past. He had not gone many rods before his recollection of the man's sober but kindly face made him ask himself if his manner had not been too severe. Indeed, all the singular-looking people were as singular in this, the quiet cheerfulness and good-will of their countenances and manners, as they were in the neat but somewhat austere simplicity of their dress.

Whatever feeling of regret he had was taken away as he stopped his horse upon the bluff and looked down into the settlement of Muddy. Though, to get back to Binks' he must eventually return to the first bottom, he always took the best and longest road on the top of the divide. From the bluff, Mr. Moddle could get a full view of the

whole brawling, straggling, quaggy, uninteresting, and wicked street which flanked the post-office of Muddy Creek. Following this along the base-line of the bluff, his eye came to the Nodoway flats, where the recurving creek intersected it. Already those newly pitched tents were swarming with eager men, women, and children. Every idler in the town seemed drawn to that one magnetic focus. Already, on an open-air platform, somebody was addressing a company of upturned, inquisitive faces, and, as Mr. Moddle looked, he could constantly see fresh stragglers dropping in. He took out his watch; it could not yet be an hour since those singular-looking wagon-loads drove in. And he had been trying all these years to save — then only presumably — here and there a soul. Those rangers! Those 'charlatans! In one little hour they could gather a greater audience than he had, counting the entire twelve-month.

"It is enough to make one despair of the people!" said Mr. Moddle, bitterly, turning his mare towards home. "I can do nothing with them. I wish I had stayed at St. Simon's,—no! no! I wish, what were better yet, that I had died. God may save these people, but he has no part in the work for me."

It was in the same sad and severe spirit that he reached home. He looked in at the dining-room, kissed his wife and baby, then went up to the large, open room in the loft where he wrote, without as usual asking them to accompany him.



He threw himself down on the floor of the loft, and pondered on many things with a sore, discouraged heart. He thought of all he had left behind in the world, for the sake of duty; then called himself an ungrateful wretch for not feeling abundantly paid, even in this world's goods, by Susie and Daisy. Then his poor little lonely flock in the jury-room passed before his eyes, and the picture of the crowd hurrying to camp-meeting swiftly followed it. The contrast was too much to bear. Mr. Moddle rose to his feet unrefreshed. His eye was flashing, and his lip curled, as he said, —

“Those ranters ! Those charlatans ! How much better to have died than been sent to a place where all that a man can do is to preach the world right into their arms !”

Mr. Binks had never advanced to that stage of father-in-law familiarity which comes in without knocking, and it was he who now announced himself by a gentle tap on the rough deal door of the loft.

“Come in,” said Mr. Moddle.

The old man helped himself to a chair, and wiped his face with his bandanna.

“I’ve been ridin’ smart,” said he. “It looks a leetle like a hail-storm to-night, and I wanted to see that the boys brought the yearlings into corral.”

“Been down into the settlement ?”

“Yes; and I stayed longer than I meant to, looking how those camp-meeting folks got on. One of ’em’s a kinsman of mine, and I wanted to make him comforta-



ble here, but he wouldn't leave the tent. He is a young fellow, and it's allus jist sich as never believe there's goin' to be a hail-storm. But I've been raised round here, and I reckon we're goin' to hev a night of it. If so, they'll have to strike camp down there t' the flat, and hold no meeting till to-morrow."

"It's well if they couldn't," replied Mr. Moddle, bitterly.

"Why — how — how so?" asked old Binks, with an air of surprise.

"Can such a devoted churchman ask that question?"

"Well, my dear sir," replied Mr. Binks, with some embarrassment at differing from his rector and his son-in-law (Binks could not tell in which relation he most admired him), "well, my dear sir, you and I know they're not looked on as regular, to be sure. There's nothing about 'em in the catechism; there's nothing about 'em in the thirty-nine Articles; and I'm not as well posted in such matters as I ought to be," said Mr. Binks, at once apologetically and cautiously feeling his way over the uncertain ground of theologic literature like an elephant crossing a morass, "nor so well as I'd like to be, but I think that there's nothin' fur nor agin them in the Rubric. They're to the regular army of salvation what the volunteers are to Uncle Sam's in war-time. They're not so well drilled as the regulars, and I myself like that old regulation musket, the Prayer-book, better than I do all the odd and even sized weepens of prayer that ye find to a camp-meetin'. When the

brother has a gift in prayer, I love uncommon to hear him; but 'taint every brother's got it. 'Way I say to camp-meetin' folks is this, 'There never was a free country saved without some guerilla fightin' out on the frontier; so, though you don't train in my company, all I want to know is if you're fightin' on the same side. If you are, go in. There's enough work for everybody that wants to save souls, out in this section, I can tell ye!' And, my dear sir, the more souls they save the gladder I'll be."

Susie, at the foot of the stairs, called them to dinner. Binks arose, glad that the conversation was turned before his earnestness led him into what might seem a preachment, and Mr. Moddle followed him moodily down to the table.

It was well that Mr. Binks hurried home to see about the shelter of his young stock; for, as he had predicted, between nine and ten o'clock in the evening the hail-storm came, — such a storm as can only be produced in a country which claims the Mississippi and Rocky Mountains of its family. It began with broad flashes of lightning, gradually increasing to a steady flame which the eyes feared to look upon, with an occasional crash and rumble which grew to one unbroken roar. It began with headlong torrents of rain, like whole lakes pouring bodily from the black and fiery heavens. It continued, with a perpetually accelerating fury of wind, until the rain became a scourge knotted with icy pebbles, and the mercury went down almost to its winter register.

Few of the oldest frontiersmen have lost their awe for a western storm, even where that emotion partakes much more of reverence than dread. Binks was awake all night. He did not even take his clothes off. This for several reasons. His sense of care for his stock, his vigilance to keep everything all safe about the premises, the loyal tendency of all pioneers to stand guard in any emergency over women and children, and the perfect delight which the sublimity of such a storm gave the æsthetic side of old Binks's nature. Those Titan stairways of black marble cloud, climbed in an instant and rifted from top to base by the white foot of the lightning; the din and trembling of heaven as their masses cracked; the unutterable spirit of power that rode in the wind; the poetic order that ruled throughout the universal clash; these to Mr. Binks, brought up in western Missouri, were what the opera, classic music, the studios, high art of all kinds, are to us. He would no sooner have missed the spectacle of that storm than you or I would go to bed on a Siddons night, were the tragic queen permitted to star it on earth again for a limited season.

Long after midnight, as he sat in his room vigilant for calls from the corral, but giving delighted attention to the sky, which he could see through his western window, Mr. Moddle with a hurried rap came to beg that he would look in and see Daisy.

"She seems very feverish," said Mr. Moddle, very like her in this through his terrible anxiety. "She

tosses and moans in her sleep a good deal, and Susie and I are troubled."

Mr. Binks's heart leaped into his throat. He instantly started up and followed his son-in-law to the bedroom, where Susie's face looking into his over her restless little armful made him the mute appeal of a young mother's first fear, the moment he opened the door.

"Father dear," said Mr. Moddle with a trembling lip, "can you tell us what is the matter with her? Her breathing seems so distressed" —

Mr. Binks took the candle and looked with tender scrutiny into the weary eyes which seemed to know him and ask help of him; saw how hard Daisy found it to breathe, and was about to pronounce the case croup, when it occurred to him to examine the child's throat, as he had seen doctors do, with a spoon-handle. Mr. Binks read the papers enough to know how diphtheria showed itself, and with one glance at the thickening white patches which lined the little throat, saw what made him set down the candle, and turn to hide his dismay from Susie by looking out of the window.

But there was no time to be lost. He could think of no medicine fitter for the case than the Hives' syrup they had been using. He had heard that steam eases the breathing of a diphtheritic patient and keeps the membrane from becoming consistent. He had heard that the faculty gave stimulants, and there ended all the wisdom which he had to help steer that all-precious little bark through this terrible exigency. No wonder

the cold drops stood on his forehead ! But something must be done at once ; it would do to wait for no doctor. So he controlled himself, and with a hopeful voice told the parents what ailed their Daisy. His courage made them brave. In less than five minutes they had replenished their fire, and had a teakettle steaming vigorously through a stable-hose over Daisy's face. They had prepared a mild milk-punch, and Susie was giving it at short intervals, a teaspoonful at a time. Binks rapidly imparted to them all the counsel he could, and hastened to the stable to ride to the settlement for a doctor. When they spoke to him about the night, he told them that it was the kind of weather he loved, and cheerily bade them take heart, and told them that his horse and he knew every foot of the road in the dark. With a lantern at his pommel he went off bravely into the pelting night, as he would have gone into a battle to serve any whom he loved.

As soon as the thunder hid the clatter of his hoofs, his son-in-law sat mutely down by the fire, gazing into his wife's face and Daisy's. The vapor seemed beginning to make the baby's breathing easier, but the stimulants had yet done little for her evident languor and pain.

"Husband," spoke Susie, when the silence of the watchers got unendurable, "will you read a little in the Bible to me ? I feel so afraid, dear, — and my heart aches so."

He kissed her tearful eyes and tremulous mouth, and

went and brought his own old Family Bible from the spot where Susie had set a cushion for it when she was first married. He sat down by the lamp, and, in the mechanical way of one stupefied with anxiety, slowly spread the book open on his knees.

What always had happened, from the first day its pages held Binks's letter, happened now. The leaves separated at the prophecy of Mr. Moddle's namesake. In the same mechanical way with which he opened the book his eye glanced down the column, and as it went the following passages past it in review like some sketchy but powerfully-drawn panorama:

"And the Lord God prepared a gourd, and made it to come up over Jonah, that it might be a shadow over his head to deliver him from his grief. So Jonah was exceeding glad of the gourd.

"But God prepared a worm . . . . . and it smote the gourd that it withered.

"And it came to pass . . . . that Jonah said, 'It is better for me to die than to live.'

. . . . "Then said the Lord, thou hast had pity on the gourd, for the which thou hast not labored, neither madest it grow.

. . . . "And should not I spare Nineveh?"

"O dear wife!" said Mr. Moddle, kneeling down at the lap where his little Daisy lay, "I have been an ungrateful, hard-hearted sinner."

"Husband!" said Susie, half-reproachfully. Though she knew in a general way that all mankind are sinners,



her husband seemed to her a man who could never be ungrateful or hard-hearted.

“Yes, Susie, not to you, nor to Daisy, nor to dear father, but to God. I have quarrelled with his mercy and compassion, — been angry with his largeness, — been angry that much good is done in the world by men widely other than myself. I have quarrelled with his creation of me, — with the places where he has put me in life. I have been restive and impatient. *I restive ! I impatient !* to whom he gave you and Daisy as a lovely bower to grow up over me while I sat in the desert of my life crying God’s warning to a world no worse than I. Not because I had any right to command, but because I was to be spoken through from above. I impatient ! when perhaps even to-morrow more souls may be saved out of Muddy by those Methodists than I have saved with my whole three-years’ work ? *That* did make me impatient. It was for a moment. I abhor myself for that moment ! How can I wonder that, to call me back from such a black spirit, he, who sent me the sweet plant to be my cover from the heat, will not hesitate, if need be, to smite it ! But, O Lord, the lesson is learned. I have seen my sin. I am glad thy work is done by *anybody* ! Give me any part of it, — only spare this dear, dear shelter !”

In the intensity of his emotion, he clasped his arms around his wife and child, and kissed them, — all three face to face.

Daisy opened her lovely eyes, knew her father, and



stretched out her little arms to go to him. This first conscious effort brought on an immediate spasm of distressed breathing. The young father leaped up in despair.

“O God ! I have killed my child !” he thought, heart-brokenly, as he brought the steam nearer to Daisy’s face.

She gave a convulsive grasp, — the veins in her forehead grew purple while the blood was slowly settling back into her parents’ hearts, and then Life drove out Death with one great throe. Something like a little delicate cartridge-paper was all that separated between the foes; and when the fiercest combat raged for the possession of Daisy, Life broke that through with a cough. A little delicate cast of a little delicate windpipe — to think that the dividing width between Life and Death may be less than a line ! — that the decision between them may be an ounce or so surplus of pneumatic pressure, inherited from a strong-lunged race !

The false membrane ejected, the baby’s breathing was perceptibly easier at once. Mr. Moddle sat till dawn, feeding her milk-punch as she lay in her mother’s lap, and keeping up the steam above her face. Gradually her face lost its bloated look and sank toward the sweet, natural roundness of childhood; her pulse became even and fuller; and, at intervals, she appeared to be getting good, natural sleep. When she awoke, she would pat their cheeks, take a teaspoonful of her punch, lie curiously regarding them for a while, then draw a

pleasant little sigh, as if the inspection had proved satisfactory, and go to sleep for half an hour more.

The day broke cold and murky. The hail had ceased, but the wind was savage, booming in and out through the deep ravines of the bluff, making havoc with all the dead cotton-woods, whirling great sheets and tangled skeins of bark into the air, like a crazy rag-man out on holiday; snapping off from the dismantled skeletons entire limbs at once; and trying the stanchness of everything along Muddy Creek, as a man's hour of sorrow tries the loyalty of his friends.

There was one institution along the bank of this Epic's sacred river, which stood the test as well as if it had been rooted three feet in the soil, instead of lifted that height above it by a swift-galloping horse, — Daisy's grandfather, to wit, — who, with his long grey hair streaming from under his slouch, the ends of his grizzled mustache floating back to his ears, his buffalo collar dangling loose on his back, his throat open and his face full of a whole life's faith and patience concentrated into one hour, — did not seem to know it was cold, and rode as the Pride of the Border should, whether it blow or no. Beside him came another man, — a rough-looking fellow, in his great bear-skin coat, — whom Mr. Moddle would scarcely have taken for the person accosting him yesterday with a tract, unless he looked closely in his face, and saw the grave refinement, simplicity, and kindness there was there. As they both rode silently, Mr. Binks thought over the matter of his night's errand. He

had found the only two doctors of the settlement off long distances on midwifery cases.

"Well," said Mr. Binks, "God save the little babies that are goin' to be born. O Lord, if ye could, save Daisy, too!"

He had caught hold of God with such a desperate faith that he was quite at peace.

"If it had been best for Daisy, the doctors would have been here. The angels that take care of little children, always behold my father's face."

The thought occurred to him, as by an inspiration arising out of this peace, that he had heard his cousin talk of a missionary announced to speak at the camp-meeting, who was also a very able practitioner of medicine. The hail had long ago broken up the camp; for though one may put up with lying out in a hail-storm on the Plains, not even an Indian does it when he can get shelter. The camp-folk were dispersed among various houses along the street, and thus it happened that Mr. Binks could not gain clue to the missionary, wake him and get him on the road home with him, until dawn was breaking in upon the watchers by Daisy.

"Sunrise!" said Binks. "Don't you think there's some leetle chance still, brother Linn?"

"I hope so."

For a moment it seemed as if the old man's heart would break; but he drew himself straight in his seat. "I wasn't there when she died,—my Susie's <sup>Susie's</sup> Daisy!"

Daisy was slumbering very quietly, when a clatter of hoofs in the front-yard brought Mr. Moddle instantly down to the door.

"Well?" said Mr. Binks.

"Daisy seems better," said Mr. Moddle.

The old man's stern, grave face melted away at once into the look of a thankful little child, and clasping his son-in-law's neck, he hid his face in his breast and wept aloud.

"Come, come," said he, resolutely, "I mustn't break down *now*! I'm forgettin' my manners, brother Linn — this is my dear son, — my Susie's husband and my Daisy's father, — Mr. Moddle, brother Linn.

"I have seen you before, — you offered me something yesterday which I too churlishly refused. I am sorry for it. Though there may be many things we disagree upon, I've gone through during the past night, with enough to show me that I've been wrong in quarrelling about our shares in the work of the world. Now, I ask you only this, — what work do you want in this world" —

"To help make the world better," said the missionary, opening to the young man's scrutiny as kind and honest a pair of eyes as ever belonged to a soul true to its inmost conviction.

Mr. Moddle stretched out his hand, and took the missionary cordially.

"That is my work, also, brother Linn."

The next day in camp-meeting brother Linn publicly thanked God for the recovery of Daisy, and there was

not a dry eye in the tent when the people heard for the first time at once of the sickness and recovery of fine old Binks's grandchild. From that hour the tender layer of the Muddy Creek nature seemed to have been reached. The raging drunkards, the quarrelsome bullies, the card-sharpers, and the irreclaimable loafers, all began flocking into the tents, seemingly for no other reason than that a simple little story had been told of a popular favorite's baby-grand-daughter, who had been given back from death in answer to agonizing prayer. I know people who think this a most ridiculous reason for making such a stir; but I have to deal with facts as they universally are among mankind,—in this particular instance among the Missourians of Muddy Creek. They were powerfully moved by the incident, so that great, shaggy fellows, whose appearance at the window of a drawing-room would have thrown all the women into hysterics, were to be seen sobbing like children. They evidently believed it was an answer to prayer, for they fell to praying immediately. The result, while the camp-meeting stayed in Muddy Creek, was a settlement freer from its worst vices than old Binks himself had ever seen.

And after the camp-meeting went, what?

Not the millennium. It is no one-dose remedy which will ever cure the world. Muddy Creek settlement, sharing with the world in this respect, did not become so good that there was not much left for Mr. Moddle. Nothing was absolutely perfect; there was no day when trenching was not as large a part of the Christian soldier's

work as psalm-singing; the best people in the parish were not so good but they could conceivably be better; but Mr. Moddle had become a changed man, who could tolerate the world as it is, and do his share in it.

Not that the change in the place was imperceptible. There was a shutting up of all the worst dens, the restoration of peace in families to which it had been a stranger for years, the addition to Mr. Moddle's church of many whom the camp-folks had reclaimed. For as old Binks said,—

“There are lots of people who could take real comfort with their heads, if they only got their hearts saved first.” Perhaps, also, the preaching of the rector is more to the hearts of men than it used to be; for many more people than he ever found before, now feel a sincere affection for him. Old Binks has now two desires of his heart—an able man for Muddy Creek and a house to praise God in. The latter is an unpretending frame structure, with a small organ, a cross on the spire and no mortgage anywhere.

Daisy and Susie shall paint a little picture to close this view of Mr. Moddle's experience. As he sits at twilight among the Michigan roses which climb on his porch, the baby, grown to be a lovely little girl of six, and Susie, changed only by the deepening of her eyes' constant expression of wifely and maternal love, lean over him, until he is embowered upon both sides in curls.

“See, mamma, we're making a little summer-house over papa.”

And that moment there came into Mr. Moddle's mind a text, which has dropped out of the canonical version of his namesake's prophecy:

"And Jonah said, 'I have sinned.' Wherefore the Lord rebuked the blight, and the gourd sprang again, and its shelter was sevenfold. And Jonah sat under the shadow of the gourd and thanked the Lord exceedingly."



LITTLE BRIGGS AND I.

(195)



# LITTLE BRIGGS AND I.

---



'M going to give you a bit of autobiography, and when I say that, I don't mean the usual kind. Most people who write their own lives make up for themselves an ideal of perfect living, to which they square their facts. The Rev. Mr. Rhodomontade does not tell how he pulled all the hairs out of his Greek professor's horse's tail, and the Hon. Simon Pure gives us no reminiscences of the day when he cheated at marbles. I've no doubt that Payson got tight, and James Brainerd Taylor stole sweetmeats off the top shelf of his mother's closet ; that Benjamin Franklin played hookey, and General Scott cried when he got thrashed. Read their memoirs, and you wont find a stagger or a stained apron, a black mark or a blubber, in the whole of them. If memoirs are meant for a personal puff, this is all very well. If they're for the generation to come after us, it couldn't be worse. Many a trembling saint gets demoralized by contemplation of such inaccessible excellence. He feels

as if he were reading about another man's having got to Newport without ever having passed through Massachusetts or Connecticut, Narraganset Bay or Long Island Sound. His idol has the fruits of experience without the experience itself; and, naturally considering him an exceptional case, he gives up the insoluble problem of resembling him. I don't think Rousseau's *Confessions* exactly the kind of book for boarding-school reading, but for instruction in the conduct of human life it's worth a dozen memoirs of any Mr. Optimus Paragon, written by himself. Let's know where the reefs are, if you *did* get that ugly bump on your keel! So far as we have steered, there's no remarkably plain sailing; if *you've* had it all the way, very well; you're in port now; hand your log over to the owners. We, who have plenty of foul weather, are busy with charts, and, when there's a fair spell, find livelier reading in Robinson Crusoe. If you don't like to tell how many mistakes you've made, how rash you've been, how mad, even how mean, — why, you've etymology on your side, for modern autobiography is derived from the fact that it's a man's life as it ought-to-be, and not as it was. In that sense I'm ruled out of your company, for this sketch is no ought-to-be-ography at all.

My name is Ben Thirlwall, and I am the son of rich but honest parents. I never had a wish ungratified until I was twelve years of age. My wish then was to stay on a two-year-old colt which had never been broken. He did not coincide with me, and a vast revela-

tion of the resistances to individual will of which the universe is capable, also of a terrestrial horizon bottom upward, burst upon me during the brief space which I spent in flying over his head. Picked up senseless, I was carried to the bosom of my family on a wheelbarrow, and awoke to the consciousness that my parents had decided on sending me to boarding-school, — a remedy to this day sovereign in the opinion of all well-regulated parents for all tangential aberrations from the back of a colt or the laws of society.

The principal's name was Barker ; and my only clue to his character consisted in overhearing that he was an excellent disciplinarian. I was afraid to ask what that meant, but on reflection concluded it to be a geographical distinction, and, associating him with Mesopotamia or Beloochistan, expected to find him a person of mild manners, who shaved his head, wore a tall hat of dyed sheep's wool, and did a large business in spices with people who visited him on camels in a front-yard surrounded by sheds, and having a fountain that played in the middle.

Having read several books of travels, I was corroborated in my view when I learned that Mr. Barker lived at the east, and still further, when, going around Point Judith on the steamboat with my father, I became very sick at the stomach, as all the travellers had done in their first chapter.

I need not say that the reality of Mr. Barker was a very terrible awakening, which contained no lineament

of my purple dream save the bastinado. Without distinction of age or season the youths who, as per circular, enjoyed the softening influences of his refined Christian home, rose to the sound of the gong at five A. M., which may have been very nice in a home for the early Christians, but was reported among the boys to have entirely stopped the growth of Little Briggs. This was a child, whose mother had married again, and whose step-father had felt his duty to his future too keenly to deprive him of the benign influences of Barker any time in the last six years. After rising, we had ten minutes to wash our faces and hands, — a period by the experience of mankind demonstrably insufficient, where the soap is of that kind very properly denominated cast-steel (though purists have a different spelling), and you have to break an inch of ice to get into the available region of your water-pitcher. Chunks, who has since made a large fortune on war-contracts, kept himself in pea-nuts and four-cent pies for an entire winter session, by selling an invention of his own, which consisted of soap, dissolved in water on the stove during the day-time, put in bottles hooked from the lamp-room by means of a false key, to be carried to bed and kept warm by boys, whose pocket-money and desire for a prompt detergent in the morning were adequate to the disbursement of half a dime a package. I myself took several violent colds from having the glass next my skin during severe nights; but this was nothing so bad as the case of Little Briggs, who, from lack of the half-dime, often came down to prayers

with a stripe of yesterday's pencil-black on one side of his nose, and a shaving of soap, which, in the frenzy of despair, he had gouged out of his stony cake, on the other. The state of mind consistent with such a condition of countenance did not favor correct recitation of the tougher names in Deuteronomy; so, it can be a cause of surprise to no one, that, when called on at prayers and prompted by a ridiculous neighbor, little Briggs sometimes asserted Joshua to have driven out the Hivites and the Amorites, and the Canaanites and the Jebusites, and the Hittites and the Perizzites, and the Moabites and the Musquito-bites, for which he was regularly sent to bed on Saturday afternoon, as he had no pocket-money to stop, his papa desiring him to learn self-denial young, as he was intended for a missionary; though goodness knows that there wasn't enough of him to go round among many heathen.

From this specimen of discipline may be learned the entire Barkerian system of training. I was about to say, "*ex uno disce omnes*," but, as it's the only Latin I remember from the lot which got rubbed into—or rather over—me at Barker's, I'm rather sparing of it, not knowing but I can bring it in somewhere else with better effect. As with the Word of God, so with that of man,—the grand Barkerian idea of how to fix it in a boy's memory was to send him to bed, or excoriate his palm. If religion and polite learning could have been communicated by sheets, like chicken-pox, or blistered into one like the stern but curative cantharides, Mr.



Barker's boys would have become the envy of mankind and the beloved of the gods; but not even Little Briggs died young from the latter or any other cause, which speaks volumes for his constitution.

Even at Barker's, boys grew up, somehow; and in process of time I became fourteen years of age. I recollect that epoch well, for it was marked by my first sorrow. I learned to sympathize, at least half way, with Little Briggs. I lost a good and indulgent father, though I did not get one of an opposite character, nor indeed any at all. When I came back to Barker's, a few weeks after the funeral, little Briggs looked at me with peculiar interest, and made me a timid offer of baked chestnuts.

"I had on as good clothes as that, when I was in mourning, — real bombazine with jet buttons," said Little Briggs, waxing confidential during second recess. "I wish I was in mourning now. Do you feel very bad?"

My heart rose in my throat.

"Of course you do. But *I* wouldn't. I'm different, you know; my dad's not the real thing, — only imitation. If he should die I wouldn't cry — no more — no more than — than" — Little Briggs cast about for some particularly stern and tearless comparison, and finally hit on the not very felicitous one of "that pump," which just at the moment was yielding water freely to the solicitations of Mr. Barker's hired man, Yankee. Yankee was pumping for the cook, between whom and himself there were supposed to be still more romantic

love-passages, wide credence having been given among Barker's boys to the theory that she was the daughter of a man with countless millions, who had turned her out of doors on account of her love for a pedler of humble birth ; upon which she and the pedler, not to be separated, had come to take service at Barker's. Maturer selfishness than ours would have propitiated her with reference to her post-obit expectations, but the blandishments of Barker's boys were directed solely to the more immediate particular of pies. As we passed Yankee and the cook, the latter glanced at Little Briggs's threadbare knees, and said compassionately to her companion, —

“Poor thing ! he don't look as if he was much sot on by his family !”

“Wall, naow,” replied Yankee, with a drawl and twinkle, “I should say, to look at him, that they'd all on 'em sot on him to once, and tol'ble heavy tew !”

Little Briggs heard him, and made what within my experience was his first self-assertion. He rushed at the pump, with his face as pale as death and his lip quivering, drew back his foot, paused, and —

“See here, you old hog,” said Little Briggs, “if that wasn't the cook's pail, I'd — I'd kick it over !”

“They're all hogs,” he added, as he walked away with me, leaving Yankee petrified by his exceptional demonstration, “everybody's hogs at Barker's. Barker's the biggest; he haint got any more feeling than a bedpost. When your father died, the fellers all signed a paper

asking for a half-holiday, and Pete Gilbert took it up to him ; and he went right on with school just the same. Don't I wish I was big enough to break his head ! I'd run away this minute — if I'd only got anywhere to run to ! ”

Whether, as a result of his first bold stand, or from the expansive influence of having found in me something like a common ground of human sympathy, Little Briggs, to the surprise of everybody, began growing ; — so rapidly, in fact, that within a few months he confided to me as many as three letters, signed, “ Yours, T. Mixer,” and written in a stiff, invoicy hand, to complain of an extension of legs which had defeated all T. Mixer's calculations regarding the annual family demand for pepper and salt cassimere ; and, moreover, if the mind might yield fond credence to T. Mixer as a representative of Briggs's mamma's opinions, given that lady great solicitude from being an indication of the “ tuberculous diathesis.” “ If I've got to have that,” said Briggs, “ I'd rather stay short — what is it ? ” I confessed my ignorance, and advised him to ask Barker, in which I did him an unintentional unkindness, that worthy inviting him to examine the dictionary, which might have suggested itself in the first instance, and assisting him to fix it in his mind by writing it on a slate three hundred times after school-hours.

In spite of all (I am not sure but this may be a mixture of metaphors), Briggs's legs turned a deaf ear to parental remonstrance, his upper frame at the same time

filling out to a degree which, taken in connection with the stern simplicity of Barker's table, was a corroboration of the nutritive properties of oxygen, which must have satisfied the most sceptical physiologist. By the season that we were both fifteen, he lacked but an inch of the five feet six on which I prided myself; and six months after, when I began to talk of going to college, he was quite up to me, and, but for a certain unmistakable air of never having any pocket-money, one of the wholesomest looking boys in school.

It was about this latter period, that an astonishing innovation was introduced at Barker's. The two Misses Moodle came to establish a young ladies' seminary in the village of Mungerville, on whose outskirts our own school was situated, bringing along with them, as the county paper stated, "that charming atmosphere of refinement and intellectuality in which they ever moved;" and, what was of more consequence, a capital of twenty girls to start with. Professional politeness inspired Mr. Barker to make a call on the fair strangers, which the personal fascinations of the younger Miss Moodle induced him to repeat. The atmosphere of refinement and intellectuality gradually acted on him in the nature of an intoxicating gas, until at length, after twenty-five years of successfully intrenched widowhood, he laid his heart in the mits of the younger Miss Moodle, and they two became one Barker.

As a consequence of this union, social relations began to be established between the two schools. Mrs. Bar-

ker, of an occasional evening, wished to run down and visit her sister. If Mr. Barker was engaged in quarrying a page of Cicero out of some stony boy in whom nature had never made any Latin deposit, or had just put a fresh batch of offenders into the penal oven of untimely bed, and felt compelled to run up now and then to keep up the fire under them, by a harrowing description of the way their parents would feel if they knew of their behavior—an instrument dear to Mr. Barker as a favorite poker to a boss-baker in love with his profession—then, after a clucking noise, indicative of how much he would like to chuck her under the chin, but for the presence of company, Mr. Barker would coo to Mrs. Barker, “Lovey, your pick, sweet!” waving his hand comprehensively over the whole school-room; or “Dear, suppose we say Briggs, or Chunks, or Thirlwall,” as the case might be. The only difficulty about Briggs was clothes. That used to be obviated by a selection from the trunks of intimate friends; and Briggs was such a nice boy, that it was a real gratification to see him with your best jacket on. Many’s the time the old fellow has said to Chunks or me, “What a blessing that I grew! If I hadn’t, how could I ever wear your trousers?” In process of time these occasional visits, as escort to Mrs. Barker, expanded into an attendance of all the older boys (when not in bed for moral baking purposes) upon a series of bi-monthly soirées, given by the remaining Miss Moodle, with a superficial view to her pupils’ attainment of ease in society; and a material

substratum of sandwiches, which Miss Moodle preferred to see, through the atmosphere of refinement and intellectuality, as "a simple repast." To this was occasionally added a refreshment, which I have seen elsewhere only at Sunday-school picnics,—a mild tap of slightly sweetened water, which tasted as if lemons had formerly been kept in the pail it was made in ;—only for Sunday schools they make it strong at the outset, and add water during the hymns, with a vague, but praiseworthy expectation that, in view of the sacredness of the occasion, there will be some miraculous interposition, as in the case of the widow's cruse, to keep the beverage up to proof ; while Miss Moodle's liquor preserved throughout the evening a weakness of which generous naturès scorned to take advantage beyond the first tumbler.

At this portion of my career I was dawned upon by Miss Tucker. From mature years, I look back with a shudder upon the number of parchmenty sandwiches which I ate, the reservoirs of lemony water which I drank, in order to be in that lovely creature's society. I experienced agonies in thinking how much longer it might be before I got a coat with tails, when I calculated how soon she would be putting up her back hair. Her eyes were as blue as I was when I thought she liked Briggs ; and she had a complexion compared with which strawberries and cream were nowhere. When she was sent to the piano, to show people what the Moodle system could do in the way of a musical education,



I fell into a cataleptic state, and floated off upon a flood of harmony. Miss Moodle and her mits, self and lemon kids, even the sleepless eye of Barker, watching for an indiscretion, upon the strength of which he might defensibly send somebody to bed the next Saturday afternoon, all vanished from before me, swallowed up in a mild glory, which contained but two objects, — an angel with low neck and short sleeves, and an insensate hippopotamus of a piano, which did not wriggle all over with ecstasy when her white fingers tickled him. At such moments, I would gladly have gone down on all fours, and had a key-board mortised into my side at any expense of personal torture, if Miss Tucker could only have played a piece on me, and herself been conscious of the chords she was awakening inside my jacket. I loved her to that degree that my hair never seemed brushed enough when I beheld her ; and I quite spoiled the shape of my best boots through an elevation of the instep, caused by putting a rolled-up pair of stockings inside each heel, to approximate the manly stature, at our bi-monthly meetings. Even her friend, Miss Crickey, — a mealy-faced little girl, with saffron hair, who had been pushed by Miss Moodle so far into the higher branches, that she had a look of being perpetually frightened to death with the expectation of hearing them crack and let her down from a great height, — seemed beautiful to me from the mere fact of daily breathing the same air with such an angel, sharing her liquorice-stick, and borrowing her sweet little thimble.



I had other reasons for prejudice in Miss Crickey's favor. She was the only person to whom I could talk freely regarding the depth of my passion for Miss Tucker. Not even to the object of that tremendous feeling could I utter a syllable which seemed in any way adequate. With an overpowering consciousness how ridiculous it was, and not only so, but how far from original, I could give her papers of lemon Jackson-balls, hinting simultaneously that, though plump as her cheeks, they were not half so sweet ; and through a figure, whose correct name I have since learned to be periphrasis, I could suggest how much my soul yearned to expire on her ruby lips, by asking if she had ever played door-keeper ; regretting that the atmosphere of refinement and intellectuality did not admit of that healthful recreation at Moodle's, and begging her to guess whom I would call out if I were door-keeper myself. When she opened her blue eyes innocently, and said, "Miss Crickey ?" the intimation was rejected with a melancholy dissatisfaction, which would have been disdain but for the character of my feelings to its source. And when, on my pressing her for the name of the favored mortal whom she would call out if she were door-keeper, she slyly dropped her eyes and asked if Briggs sounded anything like it, I savagely refused to consider the proposition at all, and for the rest of the evening ate sandwiches to that degree I wonder my life was not despaired of, and fled for relief to the lemony bowl. The result of this mad vortex having been colic and calomel, after my

return to Barker's on that evening, I forswore such dangerous excesses at the next bi-monthly ; but putting a larger pair of stockings in each boot-heel, to impress Miss Tucker with a sense of what she had lost, I devoted myself during the earlier part of the evening to a growing young woman, of the name of Wagstaff, considerably older than myself and running straight up and down from whatever side one might contemplate her. Her conversation was not entertaining, unless from the Chinese point of view, which, I understand, distinctly favors monosyllables, and she giggled at me so persistently that I feared Miss Tucker would think I must be making myself ridiculous ; but, on her being sent to the piano, I stood and turned over her music with a consciousness that if I ever looked impressive it was then. All this I did in the effort to seem gay, although my heart was breaking. I had no comfort on earth save the thought that I had been brutal to Briggs, and that he sat in an obscure corner of the room among some little girls in Long Division, hiding, behind an assistant teacher's skirts, the whitey-brown toe which my blacking-brush had refused to refresh, while I bore my grief upon a pair of new boots plentifully provided with squeak-leather. When Miss Tucker slipped a little piece of paper into my hand, as I made a hollow show of passing her the sandwiches, I came very near dropping the plate ; and when I had a chance to open it unobserved, and read the words, " Are you mad with me ? " I could not occupy my cold and dreary pinnacle a moment lon-

ger, but sought an early opportunity of squeezing her hand two seats behind the voluminous asylum of Briggs's toes, and whispering, slightly confused by intensity of feeling, that if I had done anything I was sorry for, I was willing to be forgiven. From that moment I was Miss Tucker's slave. Oh, woman, woman ! The string on which you play us is as long as life; it ties your baby-bib; it laces your queenly bodice; and on its slenderest tag we dangle everywhere !

The next term at both Moodle's and Barker's ran from May to October. The blessed discovery of long summer vacations had not yet dawned upon the educational mind. Mr. Barker or Miss Moodle would have regarded such a thing very much as a kitchen-gardener would have received a proposition to give holiday through the warm weather to his early cauliflowers. What was the use of such nice long days, except to get the whole of the rule for cube root at one lesson ? As for passing a Saturday afternoon in bed, what month could compete with July in its opportunities of salutary irritation ? So all the boys and girls of my day, melted through the dog-days into the moulds of classic eloquence, discovered the value of  $x$  while their own flesh took its place as an unknown quantity ; solved the square of the hypotenuse and the rotundity of their own solids with the same process, and exuded on the other side of the French irregular verbs as an insensible perspiration. When I think what we endured, I am all the more set in my conviction of the hypocrisy of autobiographies; for I know that

no man could ever have struggled through to worldly eminence in this day, who did not freely play hookey in that ; while distinguished piety would be too much strain on any mature modern constitution which in boyhood had not relieved itself by going out into the middle of a ten-acre lot for, at least, a quarterly swear.

When I returned for the summer session, I had two comforts, which were not granted to every boy at Barker's — a kind and neighboring ma and a coat with tails. The latter in several newspapers, and a trunk perceptibly marked with my name and address in full upon three several cards, to provide against the contingency of its miscarriage, which I could not think of on the steamboat without being indescribably moved, came with me to my little coop at Barker's. The former, having been recommended by her physician to try sea-air during the summer, took a pretty little cottage, with ample grounds and a stable, to which she brought down her own horses, at a quiet though favorite watering-place, preserving, after a deservedly admired usage, its old romantic Indian name of Squash-ke-bosh. Squash-ke-bosh was situated at a distance of but fifty miles, by a good post road, from the village of Mungerville. It was considered by Mr. Barker very injurious to his pupils' future prospects to allow them to see their parents in term-time. He thought it made them dissatisfied when they got back to school. Nor was he far out of the way, when we consider that even Buffum, the least impressible boy in school, was moved to tears whenever he got a letter

from his mother, and made inadequate to any decent amount of Latin grammar for the rest of the afternoon solely by the reflection of what a hand she was for chicken pot-pies. Nevertheless, the feeling of sympathy toward an invalid for whom sea-air was recommended, and the thought that Mrs. Barker might also like to become an invalid of the same kind at a cheap rate sometime during the summer, made it impossible for Mr. Barker to refuse a lady, with such a nice house and grounds, the request that her darling might pass an occasional Sunday with her and have a week for the same purpose about the Fourth of July.

A boy with such a kind ma and a coat with tails was naturally expected to be very good during the entire term. It is astonishing how insufficient basis these mercies proved for the proper style of behavior on my part, and when I now look back on what I went and did in spite of them, I appreciate the struggles of the sincere autobiographer as I never did before. I went and took a ride without asking Barker. Perhaps it was because I did this that he said, "There's no use in granting a boy pleasures, — if you give him an inch he takes an ell;" perhaps it was because I had heard him say it before, and reflected that the witness of that previous tail-coat would rise to bar my having any further swing of wild hilarity, that I didn't ask him if I might.

It was a bright Saturday in June, — neither too cold nor too warm, — and three P. M. At a bi-monthly during the preceding week I had seen Miss Tucker, and was

still her slave. She had put her back hair up, and looked beautifully presented in that way ; but I thought what a contrast there would have been to my existing heavenly serenity of mind, had I a ma like some boys' mas and a coat without tails. I also saw Miss Crickey, who, having grown mealier during vacation and adhered to the fashion of queues tied on her back with blue ribbons, looked more than ever like a mote floating in the radiance of that back hair. I had long ago made up with Briggs, for whom I was now ready to do anything, from the particular of blacking upward, which could be any comfort to a person not the object of preference by Miss Tucker. The singular accident of his having known what to do with your participle in *dus*, when you wanted to be a peg more elegant than was compatible with your gerund in *dum*, had, on this particular Saturday, deprived Mr. Barker of any pretext for putting an extra brown upon his slack-baked mind in the oven of the dormitory ; and an amount of self-control, arguing rapid growth toward manhood's worldly astuteness, had prevented him from whistling with ecstasy over his unusual luck before he left the school-room, and being called back to write the noun descriptive of his act five hundred times upon a slate. So Briggs and I, at three P. M., as aforesaid, stood untrammelled by aught save guilty fear in the little stably-smelling pen, shared by the whips, ledgers, and buffalo-robies of Mr. Greescels, the livery-man.

"I want a conveyance," I began boldly.



"In the nature o' wot?" returned Mr. Greeseels, eying us suspiciously from under a fell left eyebrow, which needed the singeing lamp more than any hack's coat in his stud.

"I think Mr. Barker prefers a four-seated rockaway," interposed Briggs, with a prompt acuteness, which showed that his tussle with the gerund in *dum* had done wonders for his intellectual discipline.

At the same time I pulled out a gold watch, which my mother had given me during vacation, stated the time, and asked that the vehicle might be got ready immediately; also, drawing out a wallet which contained my entire savings for the term, and demanding how much it would be for the whole afternoon, with a first-rate horse let him take notice, turned around so as to show Mr. Greeseels that he was not dealing with one of your jacket sort of characters by any means. So much opulence, assurance, and tails were too much for Mr. Greeseels, who succumbed without another word. In five minutes the rockaway and a big, long-stepping gray stood at the mounting-block. I paid the price in advance, motioned Briggs to the back seat, grasped the reins, jumped up in front, and drove away. To favor the impression left upon the cautious hippodromic mind, yet with fear and trembling lest Barker should meet us, we kept the road toward the school till a turn shut the stables out of sight, then cut down a side street to the retired candy store, at which, during Miss Moodle's last bi-monthly, we had appointed a clandestine meeting with Miss



Tucker and Miss Crickey. We found those young ladies chilling their consciences with ice-cream in a back-room, and quite unable, through preoccupation in watching for a momentarily possible Miss Moodle, to say whether it was lemon or vanilla. They were prettily attired in Marseilles basquines and dresses of sprigged muslin; and the novel position of committing an impropriety had imparted an interesting flush to the cheek of Miss Crickey, which I could not but observe with satisfaction, as I definitely intended her and Briggs for each other,—a purpose additionally furthered by putting the two together on the back seat. The direction in which I should drive was perplexed by several harassing conditions. Miss Tucker was not quite sure whether the honest peasant, who accommodated Miss Moodle in the matter of milk, lived upon the Pratt's Corners road or the Tinkerville turnpike, and he was familiar with her beautiful countenance, having sold her sour buttermilk for its sunburns, had a long memory and a communicative tongue. A day-boarder, who objected to Miss Crickey from the fact of her always answering first for the men who built stone walls in a given number of days, or the boys who had apples to distribute in mental arithmetic, would probably be swinging on the parental gate all the afternoon, three miles out of town in the direction of North Jenkins; and nothing would give her greater pleasure than the solution of the question, if two girls went out riding, unbeknownst, on Saturday, P. M., how many would get put on bread and water the

next Monday morning. Briggs's step-father had an aunt with piles of money, on still another road, but as he knew the boss (such was his unfilial expression) would never go to see her unless she died, and there was no danger of her doing that, for all the family had a way of hanging on like thunder, he didn't care a row of pins whether we took that road or not. As that road happened to be the one leading to Squash-ke-bosh, and I felt a natural interest in seeing how it looked since my mother was at the other end of it, I decided that we should take it. It was a very pleasant one, with snug farms and patches of beech and oak forest upon either hand, enlivened here and there by more ambitious grounds, trim lawns with stately Palladian residences shining through bowers of ash, larch, althea, and smoke-tree in the back-ground, and the *fermes ornées* of retired merchants, who had a passion for skipping away their hard dollars on the bottomless pond of fancy cattle-breeding. A pretty little brook kept us company all the way, — now running alongside the straight old turnpike, now dodging under it to come gleefully singing out of the umber bridge-shadows on the other side, like a coquettish child gambolling about the knees and ducking between the legs of some staid ancient gentleman. Everything in the gift of bountiful nature was received with such thankful joy by the four escaped criminals who freighted the rockaway, that only the eye of an expert in natural depravity, like Barker or Moodle, could have pierced the thick veil of deception and gloated on

the depths of iniquity which lay hidden in the compass of the one-horse vehicle. As for myself, I can say that I was full of a fearful happiness. I drove in a dream of bliss. I was already married to Miss Tucker ; the big, raw-boned grey was my own team of thoroughbreds ; we were making an original honey-moon tour by easy stages, stopping at rural inns over night, having our coffee as strong as we liked, and sugaring it ourselves, in the morning ; unrestricted as to pancakes, gravy, bedtime, anything ; paying large bills with easy nonchalance out of an inexhaustible cheque-book carried under the back-seat ; having our groom and bridesmaid behind us already engaged and driven to tantalizations of rapture by the consummated hymeneal example in front ; while, adding an intoxicating zest to all this sweetness, like the spirituous soupçon which tingles through the siropy flavors of an arrack punch, came that masculine smack of the illicit — that thought of all this being in spite of the Barker and the Moodle. Many a time since then have I trundled behind my own two-forty trotter ; but there was nobody to stop me, and I found it, oh, how tame !

We came to a place where, under drooping alders, the little brook paused in a quiet pool, like a frolicsome pilgrim, turning aside and sitting out of the noontide brightness to ponder demurely on reflections of the leaves and sky. Steeped in coolness to their dewlaps, — the whole problem of worldly anxiety reduced to flies, a few square feet of tawny back, and a whisking tail, —

a group of cattle lifted their great brown eyes vacantly toward us, as we rolled over the twentieth bridge upon our journey. I had halted the gray for Miss Tucker to admire a lovely little calf, with a white star on his forehead, and the most incapable legs ever vouchsafed an immature vertebrate. On her expressing a wish that she had him, I was submitting to my mind the insane proposition whether it would not be possible to tie his legs with a pocket-handkerchief, carry him back with us between the seats, and get Briggs to help me build a cage for him, that he might be hung up in Miss Tucker's room, when the sound of rolling wheels behind us waked me from my trance, and, looking back, I beheld Barker and Mrs. Barker, Boens the mathematical teacher, and Miss Moodle, coming on in a rockaway like unto our own.

A dreadful moment ! The eye of Barker had marked me ; the voice of Barker was already calling on me to stop. I simply gasped his name, when Miss Tucker uttered a piteous little cry like a wounded fawn. I added that of Moodle ; she hid her face in my bosom, and I was strong. The entire force of my character came to a point at the end of my whip. The gray struck out manfully ; and, looking through the back-glass, Briggs reported that the old 'un was a going it likewise. Miss Crickey, having a mathematical mind, became our strong pillar of consolation,—first suggesting to us the thought if four grown people behind Barker's fat mare could go a certain distance in a given

time, how far could as many light weights go, with our gray, in the same time? I do not recollect that I analyzed the problem according to the method of Colburn; but what I do know is, that it gave me the only comfort I ever got out of mental arithmetic. The voice of Barker grew fainter and fainter, and at last died away like some spectral echo of the dead schoolmasters who flogged mankind in the days of the Seleucidæ; then sank to nothing, as their remorseful cries have gone down into hades and oblivion. Looking back from the top of every hill, we could still see Barker pressing on. But a stern-chase is a long chase; weight and age were both against him; and, at every view, fat Kitty showed increasing bellows to mend. At length, going up a long rise, Briggs reported from the rear that the enemy had abandoned pursuit; and, for the first time venturing to look out, I beheld him, at the distance of half a mile turn Kitty's head and start for home. It was before the day of universal telegraphs, or he would have been abundantly adequate to set the rural police on us throughout the county; there was no railway communication in the direction we were travelling, or he would not have hesitated a moment to hire a special engine for our capture, and charge it on my ma's quarterly bill. What he might do was to return, and, selecting the fleetest courser in Mungerville, resume the scent in the saddle or a sulky. There was no time to lose. Without thinking whither we went, I pressed the big gray, until a solemn-faced stone at the wayside warned us

that we had strayed a distance of sixteen miles from the refining and intellectual atmosphere of Moodle's. Miss Tucker was sobbing bitterly. Briggs, plunged in gloom and his own pockets to the elbow, was uttering grim reflections upon the liveliness of a future eternity of Saturdays in bed. I was suffering agonies of remorse at the misery in which I had involved the lovely and uncomplaining but heart-broken creature at my side. Miss Crickey alone was calm. Retiring into the fastnesses of a mind strengthened by the compound fractions, and, unlike Miss Tucker, having no back hair to come down in the distraction of the exigency, she was something to admire, and I could not but hope that Briggs would do it. She never uttered a syllable until that youth ungenerously threw the whole responsibility upon me by saying, —

“Well, here's a pickle! Now what do *you* mean to do?”

Before I could reply, Miss Crickey returned from her fastnesses to the actual situation with the words, —

“I think Mr. Thirlwall once remarked that he had a ma living at Squash-ke-bosh. This is the road to Squash-ke-bosh. Sixteen from fifty leaves thirty-four miles. Let us go and throw ourselves upon the compassion of Mr. Thirlwall's ma.”

Miss Tucker looked up radiantly, bid farewell to every fear, and wiped her weeping eyes.

“That was the way George Washington did,” said Miss Tucker, in a moist voice, “the time he had been and done it with his little hatchet.”



"He had immediate recourse to his pa," said Miss Crickey, supplying the exact details with a commendable desire for historic accuracy.

"And a ma's a darned sight better than a pa," quoted Briggs from the stores of his own experience.

I myself could think of nothing better to do than Miss Crickey proposed ; for I would as soon, under the circumstances, have changed places with Regulus, and gone back to Carthage for a ride down hill in a nail-keg, as to have returned to Barker's and Moodle's. Fortunately, just after sunset, there came up a heavy thunder-shower, which gave us an excuse for turning a mile down a cross-road, and taking shelter for the night in a farm-house, where we were hospitably taken care of in the character of a family of cousins, on their way to visit an aunt; had a splendid time eating strawberries and cream, and realized the long ideal ecstasy of "door-keeper." Memory still chronicles, with a thrill, that under that humble roof I kissed Miss Tucker for the first time. Avaunt, thou spectral recollection, that Briggs similarly improved the opportunity !

The big gray, having been equally refreshed, after his fashion, took us cleverly into Squash-ke-bosh by one o'clock the next afternoon. As my ma was a new-comer to that pleasant seaport, I expected considerable trouble in finding her cottage ; but was saved that by the occurrence of another awkwardness,—meeting her just as she came out of church, upon the principal street, and startling her, by my apparition, to that degree she



dropped her handsome prayer-book and forgot whether the text had been in Revelation or Job. Explanation being impossible, where people discuss a subject from such different grounds as a rockaway and the sidewalk, I took her up on the front seat with Miss Tucker, and gave her a sketch of our recent adventures, in that spirit of frankness which characterized the before-cited memorable interview between Mr. Bushrod Washington and his boy G. The grandfather of his country could not be more lenient than was that dear mother. Her chiding was of the gentlest; tears and laughter contended for the possession of her eyes; when she got us into the house she took us all literally to her heart and kissed us, beginning with me, and promised us an asylum until mediation could let us down easily into the stern but placated bosoms of Barker and Moodle. The ensuing evening she spent in writing letters to those authorities, and to the mammas of my three fellow-convicts.

Monday and Tuesday must necessarily pass before she could receive any reply to the Barker and Moodle letters, which went out by the early stage on Monday morning. The big gray was sent back in charge of a trusty messenger, who also bore behind him in the rockaway two hampers of choice hot-house fruit as a propitiatory offering to the offended Moloch of education. While we were waiting, the hours passed in a perfect trance of delight. We played every game of which human ingenuity is capable. We bathed in the surf and we boated on the bay. We drove out in the carriage

with my mother to visit a Hanging Rock, and a Lover's Leap. When Miss Crickey said that the former was in only apparent danger of falling because a line drawn through its centre of gravity would not strike outside the base, I was pained to see Briggs manifest less admiration at the statement than its scientific accuracy deserved, and regretted that he could not experience those emotions which thrilled my bosom when, standing on the edge of the latter, I imagined Moodle and Barker coming up behind to tear Miss Tucker from my arms, put my arms tenderly around her waist, and calculated the distance between us and the fathomless deep. My mother's sympathy for Briggs was of a nature which constantly affected him to tears. She had heard of his family circumstances from me, and took extra pains to show him those delicate little attentions which are so missed by the homeless boy. If she drew him caressingly to her side, or gave him a particularly large slice of marmalade at lunch, he was certain to be missing almost immediately after, and to turn up in some unexpected corner violently blowing his nose.

On Wednesday afternoon we received our replies from Mr. Barker and Miss Moodle, couched very much in such terms as might be expected from a pair of Turkish pashas sparing the lives of a batch of political offenders at the intercession of some powerful foreign government. Briggs alone was made an exception to the amnesty. With a terseness which left so much for the imagination as to prove that Mr. Barker would have achieved great

eminence in dramatic literature had he chosen that career, the letter said that Master Briggs' case was now under consideration of his pa, who would doubtless act wisely under the circumstances, and needed no suggestions from the writer.

About an hour after the letters came, while we sat in the parlor in deep gloom, discussing the honorableness of going back to Mungerville without Briggs, the maid brought in a card to my mother's sitting-room from a gentleman in the front parlor.

"Lard and bacon! Pork packed and shipped!" exclaimed my mother. "He really can't think I deal in any such articles. Do you know any such name as that, Ben?"

I glanced at the card, and my involuntary exclamation of "By jingo!" brought Briggs to my side. "T. Mixer! O Lord!" said the poor boy; and with something very like a howl of anguish, he jumped out of the back window to the veranda and fled into the shrubbery.

"Go you after him, Ben," spoke my mother. "I'm afraid he'll run away to sea. Tell him *I'm* going in to see Mr. Mixer, and comfort him." My mother's manner prevented any misconstruction of the equivoque. It was plain enough that she was not going in to be any comfort to Mixer, and I gladly rushed out to do that office for Briggs. I found him in the hay-loft, leaning against a stringer, and apparently trying to kick all the

pegs out of his left heel, which in moments of desperation was his favorite method of making up his mind.

"You see that beam?" asked Briggs, huskily.

"Yes! what of that?" said I.

"Has your ma got a spare clothes-line, — a strong one, — one she wont want to use till to-morrow?"

"I suppose so; but what do you want of that now?"

"Just get it for me, will you, please, then leave me alone for a few minutes. If anything happens before you come back, cut a lock of hair off the back of my head; that's where my mother — used — to be — fondest of brushing — it; it don't stick out so stiff as it does in front. Tell her I didn't blame her; enclose it in a little note, and say — I — I — I loved her to the last." Here his voice choked with emotion; he buried his face in a bale of hay and groaned aloud.

I threw myself upon Briggs's neck, combed the hayseed out of his hair, and besought him to weigh the matter well before he hanged himself. I implored him to remember what nice times we might have gathering chestnuts in the fall; to think of his mother (he shut his eyes doggedly) — of me (he did not stir) — of Miss Crickey (he made a perceptible sign of disdain) — of — of — I hesitated but a moment and added, "Miss Tucker." A pang shot through me, though I did not wish him to hang himself, when I beheld a remarkable change come over him at the mention of that lovely name. He shut his teeth, clenched his fists, shook himself like a Newfoundland, and stood up to his full stature of five feet

seven. It was undeniable that Briggs was a very stout, manly looking boy.

"Well," said he, grimly, after a moment's reflection, "there's one thing I can do. I can go off to China, and come back, when I'm a man, with a cargo of silks and teas."

"Be a man now, Briggs," said I, encouragingly; "let's go out and walk in the air; you'll feel better for it. Bless me! Don't you suppose we'll stand by you, old fellow?"

We were wandering, arm in arm, toward a rustic summer-house in the back-grounds, when we perceived my mother coming down the gravel walk from the verandah, accompanied by a stranger, whom it was not difficult to divine as Mixer. The problem of his objection to Briggs's growth was solved immediately, for nature had been a stern creditor with him in the matter of legs, and after letting them run for the first twelve years of his life, inexorably refused him any further extension, so that he was scarcely, if any, taller than Briggs was when I first knew him. He had a small, lumpy head, with strands of a peculiar greenish-brown shade of hair plastered on it at wide intervals, like ribbons of half-dry seaweed; a diffused slippery nose, that looked as if it had been boned and larded as some fearful delicacy, and a flat, doughy face shoved under it to serve for bottom crust. His thin, vulgarly cut lips wore an expression of pert criticism, which might have sprung from the habit of testing the strength of pork-brine, and his red-

dish-brown eyes had all the mean truculence of a snapping cur's.

Briggs turned deadly pale when he saw him, but kept on his way toward him.

"Mr. Mixer wished to walk out and look for you," said my mother, in a voice where kindness to Briggs struggled with poorly-concealed disgust for the object at her side.

"Yes," spoke Mixer, with a smack of malignant satisfaction; "yes-s-s; happening through this flourishing seaport on business, and accidentally having heard from Mr. Barker, with whom I chanced to spend last evening, that a young friend of mine was passing the summer here very pleasantly, I naturally felt a desire to call and see how he was getting on; also, to see if there was anything I could do for him. And I think—very decidedly—I think there is. Your son, ma'am, I suppose" (turning his hang-dog eyes from Briggs to me),—"and a nice boy he is—yes-s-s, really, a very nice boy. Master Briggs, if this lady and your agreeable young friend will excuse us, suppose you oblige me with a few moments' conversation in the shrubbery?"

Briggs's lip quivered for a moment, and then he said, "Well." "We shan't go far," he added to me, with a most expressive glance, that meant that my mother and I should not. We understood him, and, as he strolled off toward the stables again with Mixer by his side, kept out of sight, but conveniently near to afford him the sense of our moral support. At first we could hear nothing



but the shrill hiss of Mixer's satirical affirmatives, answering every quiet, low-voiced explanation which Briggs made. Presently, however, Briggs's key rose, and he was quite audible when he told Mixer that he had bullied his mother almost into her grave, and was trying to shove her son in after her. "But you shan't!" added Briggs, "you shan't! and *she* shouldn't stay with you another day if I were only a man and had any place to take her to."

"So ho!" replied T. Mixer, unconsciously speaking louder, but still in a tone of satanic coolness. "Mr. Barker has failed with you too, has he? You have a peculiarly depraved and stiff-necked nature, young man, but we'll make one more effort to save you. You can take that jacket off, and be quick about it, too."

They had come to a pause under a big linden, and for a moment Briggs stood irresolutely, eying his step-father.

"Come—do you hear me?—off with that jacket!" repeated Mixer, and at the same time passing his hand inside a loose travelling-sack which he wore, produced a stout, red raw-hide about three feet long.

"Damn the brute!" said I, involuntarily, and my mother did not check me, for the blood was mounting into her gentle face till it crimsoned her very temples; and the next instant, dashing her garden-flat to the greensward, she burst from behind the shrubbery, and made her way toward Mixer at a pace which looked either very unlike an invalid for whom sea-air had been



recommended, or like one to whom the prescription had been remarkably salutary. Before she reached him, the cowhide had descended once upon the head of Briggs, and made two angry red wales across his upheld hands.

"Give me that whip, sir," said my mother, between her clenched teeth.

Mixer cast at her one look of savage amazement, then lifted the raw-hide again.

"*Give me that whip,*" repeated my mother, in a still lower tone ; her brows coming down to a point over eyes which pierced Mixer through. The cur dropped his hand, and unresistingly suffered my mother to take the rod out of it. She flung it out into the tall grass as far as she could throw ; then with flashing eyes addressed Briggs,—

"I don't want you to hurt this — *man* — you know ; but you can turn him out of my premises just as soon as you like. You're a good stout boy, and you might make mincemeat of him, if you put out your strength ; so don't knock him down, or pound him, or anything of that sort. I leave him to you ; be careful of him."

"Now's the time to oblige him !" I cried. "Off with your coat, Briggs !"

So saying, I was about to come in for my share of the fun, but Briggs stopped me.

"No, no, Ben ! Two to one's not fair play ; besides, he's up to having you put in the lock-up for assault and battery, and calling your own mother to swear on you ; I'm able for him alone I guess."

With these words Briggs let fly a neat left-hander, and threw his shoulder after it, bringing up against his substitute for a parent in the region just above the cravat-tie. Mr. Mixer went in pursuit of his balance spirally for a few yards, and, failing to overtake it, sat suddenly down. The distance between his sedentary and upright posture was not so great as in the case of a person more liberally blessed with legs; but even this little he was unable to make up before Briggs was once more upon him. Catching his ancient tyrant by the collar with his left hand, and taking as firm a hold of his nose as that broad and slippery member admitted of, with his left, he elevated him to his feet, and asked him which side he should let go of, back or front; "for out you go one way or t'other, you know," added Briggs, considerately, "and you can take your choice; so say now — push or pull?"

T. Mixer, thoroughly cowed, began whining that he preferred to have his nose let go of, but added, in a nasal voice, which marred the moral dignity of the sentiment, that he hoped that Briggs would "rebebber his filial duty, if it was odly for his Ba's sake."

"Don't you talk to me of my ma, you sneak!" roared Briggs, giving the nose one final tweak before he abandoned it; "don't you dare to mention her, you hypocrite!" he repeated, shaking Mixer as a terrier would shake a rat, "unless you want to sit on the ground again without anything to put your feet on!" Then, propelling him before him by the nape of the neck as

fast as his legs would carry him, Briggs trundled the de-throned despot to the front gate, and, while I held it open for him, dismissed Mr. Mixer into the outer world with a parting kick, which sent him half-way across the road. For a moment he turned round and showed symptoms of relieving himself in a torrent of abuse; but, seeing his castigator ready to perfect his lesson, contented himself with shaking his fist, and departed down the road toward Squash-ke-bosh. Briggs returned silently from the gate, and, sitting down on a rustic seat in the grounds, gave way to the reaction of his feelings. He struggled bravely to repress his excitement; but as he buried his face in his hands, the words came out sobbingly, —

“And now — I’m all—a-a-alone in the world.”

My mother came out of the shrubbery behind him, stole one arm tenderly around his neck, and said, —

“No, you aren’t, my child; if this has lost you all the home you had, you can have your share of Ben’s.”

So the long and the short of it was, that Briggs spent all his vacations after that under my mother’s roof; and as for his school-days, she herself personally saw to the arrangement by which he was received back at Barker’s. T. Mixer, upon reflection, concluded that he would do himself no credit by appearing further on the scene.

My history here makes a Hanlon Brothers’ leap across the chasm of seven years. Briggs had thrown away all his early experience of self-denial by refusing

to go out as a missionary, and accepting a confidential position in the Wall-street house, of which I was junior partner. We occupied a suite of rooms together in Clinton Place, and Miss Tucker, now a belle in society, was at home with her parents, a few blocks above us on the avenue. Miss Crickey had married a widower, and having a large capital of ready-made children to start the mental arithmetic business with, had gone to Germany to consult the newest lights of education. My mother's attachment to the old homestead where my father had first brought her, kept her from selling the place and she stayed there during the greater part of the year, I spending all the time with her that I could spare from my business in summer, and promising myself the pleasure of having her under my own roof during the winter, as soon as I could get married and keep house. How soon that might be was very uncertain. I was of a singularly constant nature, and still Miss Tucker's slave. My mother's letter to her ma, written on her behalf when she eloped with me from Moodle's, had led to an intimate acquaintance between the families, and now, living in New York, I visited her one and often two evenings in the week. Briggs's friendship was no less sedulous, and I spared myself the possibility of pain by refraining from the inquiry how much deeper feeling he entertained toward the object of my adoration. I knew that this state of uncertainty could not last always. I felt a daily increasing reticence toward my old school-mate, and saw that if something definite were not

done soon, an incurable jealousy and coolness would be established between us. For the sake of our intimacy, to say nothing of my own peace of mind, I must bring matters to a decision by speaking definitely to Miss Tucker. The result might be as painful as an heroic surgical operation to either Briggs or myself; but it would stop the gangrene of our friendship.

I came to this conclusion one evening when Briggs had gone up to call on Miss Tucker, and I sat by a small sea-coal fire (for, though spring, the weather was still chilly) smoking my cigar at eleven o'clock, and wondering how in the world any man could have the thoughtlessness to keep a private family up till that hour. It must have been still later when he left the Tuckers, for he did not get back to our lodgings until twelve. When he did come, he kicked off his boots as soon as he entered our parlor, and went to his bedroom without saying a word beyond good-night.

The next afternoon, as Briggs stood by a desk at the window, deep in some abstruse stock calculation, and I sat before the office-grate reading business letters just brought in by the mail-boy, we heard the whole street thrown into an uproar outside us, by the sonorous cry of "Extra!" Partners, clerks, and loungers ran to the door at once, to discover that History had opened her iron account-book with the nation, and made her first entry in the fall of Sumter. That revelation closed our own trivial business for the day. The next day's wild excitement, slowly but surely settling into the

strength of inexorable loyal purpose, who needs that I recall? Briggs was absent from his desk, but I never noticed the fact till it was time for me to go up town. Just then he entered the office. If his conduct was strange to me on the night of his last return from the Tuckers, it was stranger now. He vouchsafed me nothing but a cold nod, then entered into animated conversation with a knot of business men who were discussing the great question of the day in our back office. Having fifteen minutes to spare, I presently joined them. The talk ran upon volunteering. Several, who already belonged to municipal organizations, expressed their intention of sharing the fight, and one of them suddenly turned to me with the question, —

“Are *you* going?”

I thought of the hostage I might be leaving to Fortune, in the person of Miss Tucker, and hesitatingly replied that there seemed to be plenty going for the present without me, and I didn't know.

Briggs said, as if speaking, incidentally to a third person, that there were also plenty of cowards staying behind.

Our old jealousies culminated in an instant. “Do you mean to apply that term to me?” I asked, fiercely, with my cheeks crimson.

“If the shoe fits, wear it,” answered Briggs, nonchalantly. The kind of autobiography that I write compels me to own that I struck him. I was sorry for the act the moment after. I ought to have been patient with



him and made allowance for some hidden source of irritation. I ought not to have given serious weight to a sneer which I was conscious of not deserving, and of which I might know that another mood would make him ashamed. But these thoughts only came with the reaction from my anger, and the blow was struck.

Briggs turned on me at once, but some of the others jumped between us to prevent a fight, telling him that he had given the first offence, and trying to persuade him to walk away soberly. I returned into the front office, and tried to absorb myself in the afternoon news, that I might get quiet enough to walk up town, but my heart was too full. I thought of Briggs's unhappy boyhood, of the many hard and happy times we had been through together, of the almost brotherly relations which had so long existed between us, of the rivalry which had been disturbing them, and of the bitterness of spirit which he must have endured in silence before he could become so changed toward me. The current of my reflections was suddenly broken by the entrance of Briggs, the other gentlemen following him.

"Ben," said he, addressing me in a husky voice, "you might have known me well enough to be sure that I didn't mean to call you a coward; and yet" — his voice trembled so he could scarcely speak — "and yet, you struck me — struck me in the face. You know the way we look upon those insults, — they're things to be atoned for; and if you were not who you are, and we



what we've been to each other, I'd call you out to-morrow. But this is a time which forbids men to throw away their blood on private quarrels; so I challenge you another way, — I challenge you to go with me into the fight for our country. There is a meeting at eight o'clock to-night at Ralston and Crosby's warehouse, of young men who wish to organize a volunteer regiment for immediate service under Colonel Crosby. I shall be there to enroll myself. Will you accept ? ”

I looked into his face for a moment, and then answered “ I will.”

I kept my word, and left the warehouse at nine that evening a member of the Crosby regiment. From that place, I rode at once to the residence of Mr. Tucker. I stayed longer there than I had at the warehouse, and on coming away was member of still another organization, — an organization of two. A fortnight afterward, Briggs and I were on our way to Washington.

Again my autobiography makes a leap. The regiment had several times seen active service. Briggs and I had risen to the captaincies of our several companies. On the eleventh day of December, 1862, we had crossed the Rappahannock, and now, where this narrative resumes its thread, were fighting our way under a murderous fire from every cover, from street to street, through Fredericksburg.

As I was engaged in posting advanced skirmishers along the line on which brave Arthur Fuller had just fallen but forty rods further to the eastward, a body of

one hundred rebels rose with yells from behind a low board-fence across the way, and poured a volley into our little squad. We looked about in vain for support. It was a necessity bitter as death; but we were compelled to fall back to the cover of an old stable on the next street. Slowly and in good order, firing steadily as we retired, we got within a pistol-shot of shelter, and, looking back, saw Briggs's company coming at the double-quick up a lane on the right to reinforce us, when I felt a sudden shiver of pain, as if a sharp icicle had run into my thigh; my feet went from under me; my eyes grew misty; and then all was darkness.

When I next came to myself, it was late twilight. I was lying alone, in maddening thirst and agony,—the air about me stifling with smoke, and still singing with bullets. Two detachments of the opposing forces were contending for the space on which I lay; and, as the balls whistled over me, I momentarily expected the final quietus to my pain. In an interval between the volleys on our side, I saw a man leave the ranks, and come crawling on his hands and knees toward me. Little by little he approached the place where I lay, without attracting the aim of the opposite combatants. It was too dark to distinguish his uniform; but I supposed him some reckless rebel, coming to rob me of my watch and side-arms; and, having heard of the practice, occasionally indulged in by our foes, of putting wounded men beyond the future trouble of claiming such little trinkets,

feigned death, with eyes tight-shut and breath close-held. But he bent over me only an instant; then lifted me upon his back, with my face over his shoulder and my arms hanging down, and began returning with me, on his hands and knees, as he had come. When he was about half-way home to his comrades, the enemy evidently caught sight of him; for a shout ran along their front, and a dozen shots followed, unpleasantly close to my ears. My carrier lay down for a moment, slid me off his back, wound one arm around my waist, and, covering me with his own body, crept on his knees and the remaining hand until he had dragged me within his own lines. Just as he got in, the pain of my wounded leg reached such a pitch, through the irritation of movement, that I heard only the burst of cheers with which his friends received him, and the rattle of the volley which his return left them free to fire, then once more became dead to all the world.

When I again awoke, I found myself lying on a bed of army-blankets, with a pillow of the same material rolled up under my head; and two men stood near me, talking in a repressed voice, under the shadow of a high stone-wall.

"I'm afraid he can't possibly last through the night," said one of them; "he has lost so much blood that there's nothing left to rally. He may revive again for a moment, but hardly."

"Well, doctor," answered the other, in a voice of deep

sadness, "don't let me keep you any longer; I'll stay and watch with him till the stretcher comes."

It was my old school-mate who spoke. I tried to call on him ; but, in my intense weakness, my tongue failed me.

He brought a lantern from the shadow of the wall, and, tucking the blankets tenderly about my feet, threw the light upon his lap, and took out of his pocket a little bundle tied up in his handkerchief. When he undid the knots, I recognized in their enclosure the precious little remembrances which I had carried next my breast and taken into every fight with me since the war began. One by one he held them in the light of the lantern, and soliloquized over them bitterly.

"*She* gave me a home; *she* stood up for me when I hadn't a defender in the world; *she* did a mother's best for me when mine couldn't help me. That's her dear face, with the eyes looking just as if she expected Ben; and there lies all that will ever get home to her. And *I* brought him here — *I*, *I* ! O God ! why couldn't they have shot me, too ? Why didn't I fall dead on him while I was dragging him out of fire ? How can *I* send him back to her, *so* ?

"Here are the letters, — 'Captain Ben Thirlwall'; he'd have been a general if he'd lived. How proud his mother'd have been. How proud *she'd* have been too. And here's *her* picture. Oh, sweet, sweet ! how I've loved those eyes — ever so long ago — ever since I was a little boy ! — and I'd no right — they were *his* — they

always looked dearly at him, and I was a vain, presumptuous, passionate fool. They were to have been married the first time he got furlough. Lovely face ! all my life far off and darling as heaven, how can I ever look into you any more ? Let me be forgiven ; let me kiss you once, as if we were children again in the old farmhouse ; no one can see it—even you can't know : it will do you no wrong ; once—the only, the last time my beloved, widowed, *sister*."

He pressed his lips to the photograph ; his sorrowful eyes grew wet ; and, hearing a measured noise of feet, he thrust the articles back into his pocket, drew his cuff across his face, and stood up with a stern " Who goes there ? "

" Men with the stretcher, captain," answered a corporal, saluting.

My school-mate raised me tenderly in his arms and laid me on the stretcher. I made one desperate effort, patted his cheek and whispered, " Dear old boy ! " then swooned once more with his cry of delight ringing in my ears, and never woke again till the sun was shining brightly into my hospital tent on the northern side of the Rappahannock.

The moans of wounded men, sinking to their final rest, mingled around me with the outcries of those who were fighting their battles over again in the frenzy of delirium. Inflammation had set in, and I was suffering great pain and fever ; but my reason was left me, and my first thought was of the friend who had borne my bleeding

body and his own broken heart out of last night's hellish hail-storm.

"Briggs!" I cried, faintly.

A kind fellow in employ of the Sanitary Commission, who was watching in the tent, came softly to my side with a canteen of cool spring water and a cup of brandy.

"No — not that — not that!" said I; "where's Captain Briggs?"

He moistened my lips, and told me he would look about in camp and see. He had not been gone five minutes when I heard a bustle outside the tent and some one say, —

"Where did you find him?"

"He was shot from behind a fence last night, while he was gathering in the wounded," said another voice.

"No — not in there!" exclaimed a third, hastily; "take it to the next tent — Captain Thirlwall lies in this, badly wounded."

Take *it*. Who was it that had been *he* last night, and was only *it* this morning? A terrible strength came into me; I crawled off my ground-spread blankets, and pulled myself on my elbows to the door. When they saw my deathly face in the gap of the tent, they hurriedly closed up in front of me, making as if they would conceal from me something which lay still and ghastly on a stretcher. Too late, — I had seen the well-known forehead with its clustering brown curls matted in blood, and one ragged, blue hole in the centre — and seeing that saw no more. My next four weeks were past in raving delirium.

When my wife and I sit in the evening by our bedroom fire, our eyes sometimes fall on a worn, little daguerrotype, which has been removed from its morocco case and put on the mantle-piece, in an open frame of black walnut. It represents a bluff-faced, pleasant-eyed school-boy; it was taken during the days of fearful happiness which we spent all together at my mother's cottage by the sea. My mind glances on to another time when a full-grown man bore me under his own body's cover, out of the fire at Fredericksburg. I clasp my wife's hand closer, and as neither can see the other for tears, we know that we are both thinking of Little Briggs.





A BRACE OF BOYS.

(245)



# A BRACE OF BOYS.



AM a bachelor uncle. That, as a mere fact, might happen to anybody; but I am a bachelor uncle by internal fitness. I am one essentially, just as I am an individual of the Caucasian division of the human race; and if, through untoward circumstances,—which Heaven forbid!—I should lose my present position, I shouldn't be surprised if you saw me out in the *Herald* under "Situations Wanted—Males." Thanks to a marrying tendency in the rest of my family, I have now little need to advertise, all the business being thrown into my way which a single member of my profession can attend to.

I suppose you won't agree with me; but do you know sometimes I think it's better than having children of one's own? People tell me that I'd feel very differently if I did have any. Perhaps so; but then, too, I might be unwise with them. I might bother them into mischief by trying to keep them out. I might be avaricious of them,—might be tempted to lock them up in my own stingy old nursery-chest instead of paying them

out to meet the bills of humanity and keep the Lord's business moving. I might forget, when I had spent my life in fining their gold and polishing their graven-work, that they were still vessels for the Master's use, — I only the butler, — the sweetness and the spirit with which they brimmed all belonging to His lips who tasted bitterness for me. Then, if seeking to drain another's wine I raised the chalice to my lips and found it gall, or felt it steal into my old veins to poison the heart and paralyze the hand which had kept it from the Master, what further good would there be for me in the world? Who doesn't know in some friend's house a closet containing that worst of skeletons, — the skeleton which, in becoming naked, grim, and ghastly, tears its way through our own flesh and blood?

To be an uncle is a different kind of thing. There you have nothing of the excitement of responsibility to shake your judgment. That's what makes us bachelor uncles so much better judges of what's good for children than their fathers and mothers. We know that nobody will blame us if our nephews unjoint their knuckles or cut their fingers off; so we give them five-bladed knives and boxing-gloves. This involves getting thanked at the time, which is pleasant; and if no catastrophe occurs, when they have grown stout and ingenious, with what calm satisfaction we hear people say, "See what a pretty wind-mill the child's whittled out with Uncle Ned's birthday present!" or "That boy's grown an inch round the chest since you set him sparring!" Uncles never

get stale. They don't come every day like parents and plain pudding; they're a sort of holiday relative, with a plummy, Christmas flavor about them. Everybody hasn't got them; they're not so rare as the meteoric showers, but as occasional as a particularly fine day, and whenever they come to a house they're in the nature of a pleasant surprise.

I meander, like a desultory, placid river of an old bachelor as I am, through the flowery mead of several nurseries. I am detained by all the little roots that run down into me to drink happiness, but I linger longest among the children of my sister Lu.

Lu married Mr. Lovegrove. He is a merchant, retired with a fortune amassed by the old-fashioned, slow processes of trade, and regards the mercantile life of the present day only as so much greed and gambling Christianly baptized. For the ten years elapsing since he sold out of Lovegrove, Cashdown, & Co., he has devoted himself to his family and a revival of letters, taking up again the Latin and Greek which he had not looked at since his college days until he dismissed teas and silks to adorn a suburban villa with the spectacle of a prime Christian parent and Pagan scholar. Lu is my favorite sister; Lovegrove an usually good article of brother-in-law; and I cannot say that any of my nieces and nephews interest me more than their two children, Daniel and Billy, who are more unlike than words can paint them. They are far apart in point of years; Daniel is twenty-two, Billy eleven. I was reminded of this fact

the other day by Billy, as he stood between my legs, scowling at his book of sums.

“ ‘ A boy has eighty-five turnips, and gives his sister thirty,’ — pretty present for a girl, isn’t it ? ” said Billy, with an air of supreme contempt. Could *you* stand such stuff, — say ? ”

I put on my instructive face and answered, —

“ Well, my dear Billy, you know that arithmetic is necessary to you if you mean to be an industrious man and succeed in business. Suppose your parents were to lose all their property, what would become of them without a little son who could make money and keep accounts ? ”

“ Oh ! ” said Billy, with surprise. “ Hasn’t father got enough stamps to see him through ? ”

“ He has now, I hope; but people don’t always keep them. Suppose they should go by some accident, when your father was too old to make any more stamps for himself ? ” —

“ You haven’t thought of brother Daniel ” —

True; for nobody ever had, in connection with the active employments of life.

“ No, Billy,” I replied, “ I forgot him; but then, you know, Daniel is more of a student than a business man, and ” —

“ O Uncle Teddy ! you don’t think I mean he’d support them ? I meant I’d have to take care of father and mother, and him too, when they’d all got to be old people together. Just think ! I’m eleven, and he’s



twenty-two; so he is just twice as old as I am. How old are you?"

"Forty, Billy, last August."

"Well, you aren't so awful old, and when I get to be as old as you Daniel will be eighty. Seth Kendall's grandfather isn't more than that, and he has to be fed with a spoon, and a nurse puts him to bed, and wheels him round in a chair like a baby. That takes the stamps, *I* bet! Well, I'll tell you how I'll keep my accounts: I'll have a stick, like Robinson Crusoe, and every time I make a toadskin I'll gouge a piece out of one side of the stick, and every time I spend one I'll gouge a piece out of the other."

"Spend a *what*?" said the gentle and astonished voice of my sister Lu, who, unperceived, had slipped into the room.

"A toadskin, ma," replied Billy, shutting up Colburn with a farewell glance of contempt.

"Dear, dear! Where does the boy learn such horrid words?"

"Why, ma! Don't you know what a toadskin is? Here's one," said Billy, drawing a dingy five-cent stamp from his pocket. "And don't I wish I had lots of 'em!"

"Oh!" sighed his mother, "to think I should have a child so addicted to slang! How I wish he were like Daniel!"

"Well, mother," replied Billy, "if you wanted two boys just alike you'd oughter had twins. There aint

any use of my trying to be like Daniel now, when he's got eleven years the start. Whoop ! There's a dog-fight; hear 'em ! It's Joe Casey's dog, — I know his bark ! ”

With these words my nephew snatched his Glengarry bonnet from the table and bolted downstairs to see the fun.

“What will become of him ? ” said Lu, hopelessly; “he has no taste for anything but rough play; and then such language as he uses ! Why *isn't* he like Daniel ? ”

“I suppose because his Maker never repeats himself. Even twins often possess strongly marked individualities. Don't you think it would be a good plan to learn Billy better before you try to teach him ? If you do, you'll make something as good of him as Daniel; though it will be rather different from that model.”

“Remember, Ned, that you never did like Daniel as well as you do Billy. But we all know the proverb about old maids' daughters and old bachelors' sons. I wish you had Billy for a month, — then you'd see.”

“I'm not sure that I'd do any better than you. I might err as much in other directions. But I'd try to start right by acknowledging that he was a new problem, not to be worked without finding out the value of  $x$  in his particular instance. The formula which solves one boy will no more solve the next one than the rule-of-three will solve a question in calculus, — or, to rise into your sphere, than the receipt for one-two-three-four cake will conduct you to a successful issue through plum-pudding ” —

I excel in metaphysical discussion, and was about giving further elaboration to my favorite idea, when the door burst open. Master Billy came tumbling in with a torn jacket, a bloody nose, the trace of a few tears in his eyes, and the mangiest of cur dogs in his hands.

"Oh my ! my ! ! my ! ! !" exclaimed his mother.

"Don't you get scared, ma !" cried Billy, smiling a stern smile of triumph; "I smashed the nose off him ! He wont sass me again for nothing *this* while ! Uncle Teddy, d'ye know it wasn't a dog-fight, after all ? There was that nasty, good-for-nothing Joe Casey, 'n Patsy Grogan, and a lot of bad boys from Mackerelville; and they'd caught this poor little ki-oodle and tied a tin pot to his tail, and were trying to set Joe's dog on him, though he's ten times littler"—

"You naughty, naughty boy ! How did you suppose your mother'd feel to see you playing with those ragamuffins ?"

"Yes, I *played* 'em ! I polished 'em,—that's the play I did ! Says I, 'Put down that poor little pup; aint you ashamed of yourself, Patsy Grogan ?' 'I guess you don't know who I am,' says he. That's the way they always say, Uncle Teddy, to make a fellow think they're some awful great fighters. So says I again, 'Well, you put down that dog, or I'll show you who *I* am;' and when he held on, I let him have. Then he dropped the pup, and as I stooped to pick it up he gave me one on the bugle."

"*Bugle !* Oh ! oh ! oh !"

"The rest pitched in to help him; but I grabbed the pup, and while I was trying to give as good as I got,—only a fellow can't do it well with only one hand, Uncle Teddy,—up came a policeman, and the whole crowd ran away. So I got the dog safe, and here he is!"

With that Billy set down his "ki-oodle," bid farewell to every fear, and wiped his bleeding nose. The unhappy beast slunk back between the legs of his preserver and followed him out of the room, as Lu, with an expression of maternal despair, bore him away for the correction of his dilapidated raiment and depraved associations. I felt such sincere pride in this young Mazzini of the dog-nation that I was vexed at Lu for bestowing on him reproof instead of congratulation; but she was not the only conservative who fails to see a good cause and a heroic heart under a bloody nose and torn jacket. I resolved that if Billy was punished he should have his recompense before long in an extra holiday at Barnum's or the Hippotheatron.

You already have some idea of my other nephew, if you have noticed that none of us, not even that habitual disrespector of dignities, Billy, ever called him Dan. It would have seemed as incongruous as to call Billy William. He was one of those youths who never gave their parents a moment's uneasiness; who never had to have their wills broken, and never forgot to put on their rubbers or take an umbrella. In boyhood he was intended for a missionary. Had it been possible for him to go to Greenland's icy mountains without catching

cold, or India's coral strand without getting bilious, his parents would have carried out their pleasing dream of contributing him to the world's evangelization. Lu and Mr. Lovegrove had no doubt that he would have been greatly blessed if he could have stood it. They brought him up in the most careful manner, and I cannot recollect the time when he was not president, secretary, or something in some society of small yet good children. He was not only an exemplar to whom all Lu's friends pointed their own nursery as the little boy who could say most hymns and sit stillest in church, but he was a reproof even unto his elders. One Sunday afternoon, in the Connecticut village where my brother-in-law used to spend his summers, when half the congregation were slumbering under the combined effect of the heat, a lunch of cheese and apples, and the sermon, my nephew, then aged five, sat bolt upright in the pew, winkless as a deacon hearing a new candidate suspected of shakiness on "a card'nal p'int," and mortified almost to death poor old Mrs. Pringle, who, compassionating his years, had handed him a sprig of her "meetin' seed" over the back of the seat, by saying, in a loud and stern voice, —

"I don't eat things in church."

I should have spanked the boy when I got home, but Lu, with tears in her eyes, quoted something about the mouths of babes and sucklings.

Both she and his father always encouraged old manners in him. I think they took such pride in raising a peculiarly pale boy as a gardener does in getting a nice

blanch on his celery, and so long as he was not absolutely sick, the graver he was the better. He was a sensitive plant, a violet by a mossy stone, and all that sort of thing. But when in his tenth year he had the measles, and was narrowly carried through, Lu got a scare about him. During his convalescence, reading aloud a life of Henry Martyn to amuse him, she found in it a picture of that young apostle preaching to a crowd of Hindoos without any boots on. An American mother's association of such behavior with croup and ipecac was too strong to be counteracted by known climatic facts; and from that hour, as she never had before, Lu realized that being a missionary might involve going to carry the gospel to the heathen in your stocking-feet.

When they had decided that such a life would not do for him, his training had almost entirely unfitted him for any other active calling. The strict propriety with which he had been brought up had resulted in weak lungs, poor digestion, sluggish circulation, and torpid liver. Moreover, he was troubled with the painfulest bashfulness which ever made a mother think her child too ethereal, or a dispassionate outsider regard him too flimsy, for this world. These were weights enough to carry, even if he had not labored under that heaviest of all, a well-stored mind.

No misnomer that last to any one who has ever frequented the Atlantic Docks, or seen storage in any large port of entry. How does a storehouse look? It's a vast, dark, cold chamber,—dust an inch deep on the



floor, cobwebs festooning the girders, — and piled from floor to ceiling, on the principle of getting the largest bulk into the least room, with barrels, boxes, bales, baskets, chests, crates, and carboys, — merchandise of all description, from the roughest raw material to the most exquisite *choses de luxe*. The inmost layers are inextricable without pulling down the outer ones. If you want a particular case of broadcloth you must clear yourself an alley-way through a hundred tierces of hams, and last week's entry of clayed sugars is inaccessible without tumbling on your head a mountain of Yankee notions.

In my nephew's unfortunate youth such storage as this had minds. As long as the crown of his brain's arch was not crushed in by some intellectual Furman-street disaster, those stevedores of learning, the schoolmasters, kept on unloading the Rome and Athens lighters into a boy's crowded skull, and breaking out of the hold of that colossal old junk, The Pure Mathematics, all the formulas which could be crowded into the interstices between his Latin and Greek.

At the time I introduce Billy both Lu and her husband were much changed. They had gained a great deal in width of view and liberality of judgment: They read Dickens and Thackeray with avidity; went now and then to the opera; proposed to let Billy take a quarter at Dodworth's; had statues in their parlor without any thought of shame at their lack of petticoats, and did multitudes of things which, in their early married life,



they would have considered shocking. Part of this change was due to the great increase of travel, the wonderful progress in art and refinement which has enlarged this generation's thought and corrected its ignorant opinions; infusing cosmopolitanism into our manners by a revolution so gradual that its subjects were a new people before their combativeness became alarmed, yet so rapid that a man of thirty can scarcely believe his birthday, and questions whether he has not added his life up wrong by a century or so when he compares his own boyhood with that of the present day. But a good deal of the transformation resulted from the means of gratifying elegant tastes, the comfort, luxury, and culture which came with Lovegrove's retirement on a fortune. They had mellowed on the sunny shelves of prosperity like every good thing which has an astringent skin when it is green. They would greatly have liked to see Daniel shine in society. Of his erudition they were proud even to worship. The young man never had any business, and his father never seemed to think of giving him any, knowing, as Billy would say, that he had stamps enough to "see him through." If Daniel liked, his father would have endowed a professorship in some college and given him the chair; but that would have taken him away from his own room and the family physician.

Daniel knew how much his parents wished him to make a figure in the world, and only blamed himself for his failure, magnanimously forgetting that they had crushed out the faculties which enable a man to mint the

small change of every-day society, in the exclusive cultivation of such as fit him for smelting its ponderous ingots. With that merciful blindness which alone prevents all our lives from becoming a horror of nerveless self-reproach, his parents were equally unaware of their share in the harm done him, when they ascribed to delicate organization the fact that, at an age when love runs riot in all healthy blood, he could not see a Balmoral without his cheeks rivalling the most vivid stripe in it. They flattered themselves that he would outgrow his bashfulness; but Daniel had no such hope, and frequently confided in me that he thought he should never marry at all.

About two hours after Billy's disappearance under his mother's convoy, the defender of the oppressed returned to my room bearing the dog under his arm. His cheeks shone with washing like a pair of waxy spitzenbergs, and other indignities had been offered him to the extent of the brush and comb. He also had a whole jacket on.

"Well, Billy," said I, "what are you going to do with your dog?"

"I don't know what I am a-going to do. I've a great mind to be a bad, disobedient boy with him, and *not* have my days long in the land which the Lord my God giveth me."

"O Billy!"

"I can't help it. They wont be long if I don't mind ma, she says; and she wants me to be mean, and put

Crab out in the street to have Patsy catch him and tie coffee-pots to his tail. I — I — I” —

Here my small nephew dug his fist into his eye and looked down.

I told Billy to stop where he was, and went to intercede with Lu. She was persuaded to entertain the angels of magnanimity and heroism in the disguise of a young fighting character, and accept my surety for the behavior of his dog. Billy and I also obtained permission to go out together and be gone the entire afternoon. We put Crab on a comfortable bed of rags in an old shoe-box, and then strolled hand in hand across that most delightful of New York breathing-places, Stuyvesant Square.

“Uncle Teddy !” exclaimed Billy, with ardor, “I wish I could do something to show you how much I think of you for being so good to me. I don’t know how. Would it make you happy if I was to learn a hymn for you,—a smashing big hymn,—six verses, long metre, and no grumbling ?”

“No, Billy; you make me happy enough just by being a good boy.”

“Oh, Uncle Teddy !” replied Billy, decidedly, “I’m afraid I can’t do it. I’ve tried so often, and I always make such an awful mess of it.”

“Perhaps you get discouraged too easily” —

“Well, if a savings-bank wont do it there aint any chance for a boy. I got father to get me a savings-bank once, and began being good just as hard as ever I

could for three cents a day. Every night I got 'em, I put 'em in reg'lar, and sometimes I'd keep being good three whole days running. That made a sight of money, I tell you. Then I'd do something, ma said, to kick my pail of milk over, and those nights I didn't get anything. I used to put in most of my marble and candy-money, too."

"What were you going to do with it?"

"It was for an Objeck, Uncle Teddy. That's a kind of Indian, you know, that eats people and wants the gospel. That's what pa says, any way; I didn't ever see one."

"Well, didn't that make you happy,—to help the poor little heathen children?"

"That's just it, Uncle Teddy; they never got a cent of it. One time I was good so long I got scared. I was afraid I'd never want to fly my kite on the roof again, or go anywhere where I oughtn't, or have any fun. I couldn't see any use of going and saving all my money to send out to the Objecks, if it was going to make good boys of 'em. It was awful hard for me to have to be a good boy, and it must be worse for them 'cause they aint used to it. So when there wasn't anybody upstairs I went and shook a lot of pennies out of my chimney and bought ever so much taffy, and marbles, and pop-corn. Was that awful mean, Uncle Teddy?"

The question involved such complications that I hesitated. Before I could decide what to answer, Billy continued:—

"Ma said it was robbing the heathen, and didn't I get it ! I thought if it was robbing, I'd have a cop after me."

"What's a 'cop'?"

"That's what the boys call a policeman, Uncle Teddy; and then I should be taken away and put in an awful black place under ground, like Johnny Wilson, when he broke Mrs. Perkins's window. I was scared, I tell you ! But I didn't get anything worse than a whipping, and having my savings-bank taken away from me with all that was left in it. I haven't tried to be good since, much."

We now got into a Broadway stage going down, and being unable, on account of the noise, to converse further upon those spiritual conflicts of Billy's which so much interested me, amused ourselves with looking out until just as we reached the Astor House, when he asked me where we were going.

"Where do you guess?" said I.

He cast a glance through the front window, and his face became irradiated. Oh, there's nothing like the simple, cheap luxury of pleasing a child, to create sunshine enough for the chasing away of the bluest adult devils !

"We're going to Barnum's !" said Billy, involuntarily clapping his hands.

So we were; and, much as stuck-up people pretend to look down on the place, I frequently am. Not only so, but I always see that class largely represented there

when I do go. To be sure they always make-believe that they only come to amuse the children, or because they've country cousins visiting them, and never fail to refer to the vulgar set one finds there, and the fact of the animals smelling like anything but Jockey Club; yet I notice that after they've been in the hall three minutes they're as much interested as any of the people they come to poh-poh, and only put on the high-bred air when they fancy some of their own class are looking at them. I boldly acknowledge that I go because I like it. I am especially happy, to be sure, if I have a child along to go into ecstasies, and give me a chance, by asking questions, for the exhibition of that fund of information which is said to be one of my chief charms in the social circle, and on several occasions has led that portion of the public immediately about the Happy Family into the erroneous impression that I was Mr. Barnum explaining his five hundred thousand curiosities.

On the present occasion we found several visitors of the better class in the room devoted to the Aquarium. Among these was a young lady apparently about nineteen, in a tight-fitting basque of black velvet, which showed her elegant figure to fine advantage, a skirt of garnet silk looped up over a pretty Balmoral, and the daintiest imaginable pair of kid walking-boots. Her height was a trifle over the medium; her eyes a soft expressive brown, shaded by masses of hair which exactly matched their color, and, at that rat-and-miceless day, fell in such graceful abandon as to show at once

that nature was the only maid who crimped their waves into them. Her complexion was rosy with health and sympathetic enjoyment; her mouth was faultless, her nose sensitive, her manners full of refinement, and her voice musical as a wood-robin's, when she spoke to the little boy of six at her side, to whom she was revealing the palace of the great show-king. Billy and I were flattening our noses against the abode of the balloon-fish, and determining whether he looked most like a horse-chestnut burr or a ripe cucumber, when his eyes and my own simultaneously fell on the child and lady. In a moment, to Billy, the balloon-fish was as though he had not been.

"That's a pretty little boy!" said I. And then I asked Billy one of those senseless routine questions which must make children look at us, regarding the scope of our intellects very much as we look at Bushmen.

"How would you like to play with him?"

"Him!" replied Billy, scornfully, "that's his first pair of boots; see him pull up his little breeches to show the red tops to 'em! But, crackey! isn't *she* a smasher!"

After that we visited the wax figures and the sleepy snakes, the learned seal and the glass-blowers. Whenever we passed from one room into another, Billy could be caught looking anxiously to see if the pretty girl and child were coming, too.



Time fails me to describe how Billy was lost in astonishment at the Lightning Calculator, — wanted me to beg the secret of that prodigy for him to do his sums by, — finally thought he had discovered it, and resolved to keep his arm whirling all the time he studied his arithmetic lesson the next morning. Equally inadequate is it to relate in full how he became so confused among the wax-works that he pinched the solemnest showman's legs to see if he was real, and perplexed the beautiful Circassian to the verge of idiocy by telling her he had read all about the way they sold girls like her in his geography.

We had reached the stairs to that subterranean chamber in which the Behemoth of Holy Writ was wallowing about without a thought of the dignity which one expects from a canonical character. Billy had always languished upon his memories of this diverting beast, and I stood ready to see him plunge headlong the moment that he read the sign-board at the head of the stairs. When he paused and hesitated there, not seeming at all anxious to go down till he saw the pretty girl and the child following after, — a sudden intuition flashed across me. Could it be possible that Billy was caught in that vortex which whirled me down at ten years, — a little boy's first love?

We were lingering about the elliptical basin, and catching occasional glimpses between bubbles of a vivified hair trunk of monstrous compass, whose knobby lid opened at one end and showed a red morocco lining,

when the pretty girl, in leaning over to point out the rising monster, dropped into the water one of her little gloves, and the swash made by the hippopotamus drifted it close under Billy's hand. Either in play or as a mere coincidence the animal followed it. The other children about the tank screamed and started back as he bumped his nose against the side; but Billy manfully bent down and grabbed the glove not an inch from one of his big tusks, then marched round the tank and presented it to the lady with a chivalry of manner in one of his years quite surprising.

"That's a real nice boy,—you said so, didn't you, Lottie?—and I wish he'd come and play with me," said the little fellow by the young lady's side, as Billy turned away, gracefully thanked, to come back to me with his cheeks roseate with blushes.

As he heard this, Billy idled along the edge of the tank for a moment, then faced about and said,—

"P'raps I will some day,—where do you live?"

"I live on East Seventeenth street with papa,—and Lottie stays there, too, now,—she's my cousin: where d'you live?"

"Oh, I live close by,—right on that big green square, where I guess the nurse takes you once in a while," said Billy, patronizingly. Then, looking up pluckily at the young lady, he added, "I never saw you out there."

"No, Jimmy's papa has only been in his new house a little while, and I've just come to visit him."

"Say, will you come and play with me sometime?" chimed in the inextinguishable Jimmy. "I've got a cooking-stove, — for real fire, — and blocks and a ball with a string."

Billy, who belonged to a club for the practice of the great American game, and was what A. Ward would call the most superior battist among the I. G. B. B. C., or "Infant Giants," smiled from that altitude upon Jimmy, but promised to go and play with him the next Saturday afternoon.

Late that evening, after we had got home and dined, as I sat in my room over Pickwith with a sedative cigar, a gentle knock at the door told of Daniel. I called "Come in!" and entering with a slow, dejected air, he sat down by my fire. For ten minutes he remained silent, though occasionally looking up as if about to speak, then dropping his head again to ponder on the coals. Finally I laid down Dickens, and spoke myself.

"You don't seem well to-night, Daniel?"

"I don't feel very well, uncle."

"What's the matter, my boy?"

"Oh — ah — I don't know. That is, I wish I knew how to tell you."

I studied him for a few moments with kindly curiosity, then answered, —

"Perhaps I can save you the tronble by cross-examining it out of you. Let's try the method of elimination. I know that you're not harassed by any economical considerations, for you've all the money you want; and I

know that ambition doesn't trouble you, for your tastes are scholarly. This narrows down the investigation of your symptoms — listlessness, general dejection, and all — to three causes, — Dyspepsia, Religious Conflicts, Love. Now, is your digestion awry ? ”

“ No, sir, good as usual. I'm not melancholy on religion, and ” —

“ You don't tell me you're in love ? ”

“ Well — yes — I suppose that's about it, Uncle Teddy. ”

I took a long breath to recover from my astonishment at this unimaginable revelation, then said, —

“ Is your feeling returned ? ”

“ I really don't know, uncle. I don't believe it is. I don't see how it can be. I never did anything to make her love me. What is there in me to love ! I've borne nothing for her, — that is, nothing that could do her any good, — though I've endured on her account, I may say, anguish. So, look at it any way you please, I neither am, do, nor suffer anything that can get a woman's love. ”

“ Oh, you man of learning ! Even in love you tote your grammar along with you, and arrange a divine passion under the active, passive, and neuter ! ”

Daniel smiled faintly.

“ You've no idea, Uncle Teddy, that you are twitting on facts ; but you hit the truth there ; indeed you do. If she were a Greek or Latin woman I could talk Anacreon or Horace to her. If women only understood

the philosophy of the flowers as well as they do the poetry " —

" Thank God they don't, Daniel ! " sighed I devoutly.

" Never mind; — in that case I could entrance her for hours, talking about the grounds of difference between Linnæus and Jussieu. Women like the star business, they say, — and I could tell her where all the constellations are; but sure as I tried to get off any sentiment about them, I'd break down and make myself ridiculous. But what earthly chance would the greatest philosopher that ever lived have with the woman he loved, if he depended for her favor on his ability to analyze her bouquet or tell her when she might look out for the next occultation of Orion ? I can't talk bread-and-butter talk. I can't do anything that makes a man even tolerable to a woman ! "

" I hope you don't mean that nothing but bread-and-butter talk is tolerable to a woman ! "

" No; but it's necessary to some extent, — at any rate the ability is, — in order to succeed in society; and it's in society men first meet and strike women. And O Uncle Teddy ! I'm such a fish out of water in society ! — such a dreadful floundering fish ! When I see her dancing gracefully as a swan swims, and feel that fellows, like little Jack Mankyn, who " don't know twelve times," can dance to her perfect admiration; when I see that she likes ease of manners, — and all sorts of men without an idea in their heads have that, — while I turn all colors when I speak to her, and am clumsy, and

abrupt, and abstracted, and bad at repartee, — Uncle Teddy! sometimes (though it seems so ungrateful to father and mother, who have spent such pains for me) — sometimes, do you know, it seems to me as if I'd exchange all I've ever learned for the power to make a good appearance before her!"

"Daniel, my boy, it's too much a matter of reflection with you! A woman is not to be taken by laying plans. If you love the lady (whose name I don't ask you, because I know you'll tell me as soon as you think best), you must seek her companionship until you're well enough acquainted with her to have her regard you as something different from the men whom she meets merely in society, and judge your qualities by another standard than that she applies to them. If she's a sensible girl (and God forbid you should marry her otherwise!), she knows that people can't always be dancing, or holding fans, or running after orange-ice. If she's a girl capable of appreciating your best points (and woe to you if you marry a girl who can't!), she'll find them out upon closer intimacy, and, once found, they'll a hundred times outweigh all brilliant advantages kept in the show-case of fellows who have nothing on the shelves. When this comes about, you will pop the question unconsciously, and, to adapt Milton, she'll drop into your lap 'gathered — not harshly plucked.'"

"I know that's sensible, Uncle Teddy, and I'll try. Let me tell you the sacredest of secrets, — regularly every day of my life I send her a little poem fastened round the prettiest bouquet I can get at Hanft's."

"Does she know who sends them?"

"She can't have any idea. The German boy that takes them knows not a word of English except her name and address. You'll forgive me, uncle, for not mentioning her name yet? You see she may despise or hate me some day when she knows who it is that has paid her these attentions; and then I'd like to be able to feel that at least I've never hurt her by any absurd connection with myself."

"Forgive you? Nonsense! The feeling does your heart infinite credit, though a little counsel with your head would show you that your only absurdity is self-depreciation."

Daniel bid me good-night. As I put out my cigar and went to bed, my mind reverted to the dauntless little Hotspur who had spent the afternoon with me and reversed his mother's wish, thinking, —

"Oh, if Daniel were more like Billy!"

It was always Billy's habit to come and sit with me while I smoked my after-breakfast cigar, but the next morning did not see him enter my room till St. George's hands pointed to a quarter of nine.

"Well, Billy Boy Blue, come blow your horn; what haystack have you been under till this time of day? We sha'n't have a minute to look over our spelling together, and I know a boy who's going in for promotion next week. Have you had your breakfast, and taken care of Crab?"

"Yes, sir; but I didn't feel like getting up this morning."



"Are you sick!"

"No-o-o — it isn't that; but you'll laugh at me if I tell you."

"Indeed I wont, Billy!"

"Well," — his voice dropped to a whisper, and he stole close to my side, — "I had such a nice dream about *her* just the last thing before the bell rang; and when I woke up I felt so queer, — so kinder good and kinder bad, — and I wanted to see her so much, that if I hadn't been a big boy I believe I should have blubbered. I tried ever so much to go to sleep and see her again; but the more I tried the more I couldn't. After all, I had to get up without it, though I didn't want any breakfast, and only ate two buckwheat cakes, when I always eat six, you know, Uncle Teddy. Can you keep a secret?"

"Yes, dear, so you couldn't get it out of me if you were to shake me upside-down like a savings-bank."

"Oh, aint you mean! That was when I was small I did that. I'll tell you the secret, though, — that girl and I are going to get married. I mean to ask her the first chance I get. Oh, isn't she a smasher!"

"My dear Billy, sha'n't you wait a little while to see if you always like her as well as you do now? Then, too, you'll be older."

"I'm old enough, Uncle Teddy, and I love her dearly! I'm as old as the kings of France used to be when they got married, — I read it in Abbott's histories. But there's the clock striking nine! I must run or I shall

get a tardy mark, and, perhaps, she'll want to see my certificate sometime."

So saying, he kissed me on the cheek and set off for school as fast as his legs could carry him. O Love, omnivorous Love, that sparest neither the dotard leaning on his staff nor the boy with pantaloons buttoning on his jacket,—omnipotent Love, that, after parents and teachers have failed, in one instant can make Billy try to become a good boy!

With both of my nephews hopelessly enamored, and myself the confidant of both, I had my hands full. Daniel was generally dejected and distrustful; Billy buoyant and jolly. Daniel found it impossible to overcome his bashfulness; was spontaneous only in sonnets, brilliant only in bouquets. Billy was always coming to me with pleasant news, told in his slangy New York boy vernacular. One day he would exclaim,—“Oh, I'm getting on prime! I got such a smile off her this morning as I went by the window!” Another day he wanted counsel how to get a valentine to her,—because it was too big to shove in a lamp-post, and she might catch him if he left it on the steps, rang the bell, and ran away. Daniel wrote his own valentine; but, despite its originality, that document gave him no such comfort as Billy got from twenty-five cents' worth of embossed paper, pink Cupids, and doggerel. Finally, Billy announced to me that he had been to play with Jimmy, and got introduced to his girl.

Shortly after this Lu gave what they call “a little

company," — not a party, but a reunion of forty or fifty people with whom the family were well acquainted, several of them living in our immediate neighborhood. There was a goodly proportion of young folk, and there was to be dancing; but the music was limited to a single piano played by the German exile usual on such occasions, and the refreshments did not rise to the splendor of a costly supper. This kind of compromise with fashionable gayety was wisely deemed by Lu the best method of introducing Daniel to the *beau monde*, — a push given the timid eaglet by the maternal bird, with a soft tree-top between him and the vast expanse of society. How simple was the entertainment may be inferred from the fact that Lu felt somewhat discomposed when she got a note from one of her guests asking leave to bring along her niece, who was making her a few weeks' visit. As a matter of course, however, she returned answer to bring the young lady and welcome.

Daniel's dressing-room having been given up to the gentlemen I invited him to make his toilet in mine, and, indeed, wanting him to create a favorable impression, became his valet *pro tem.*, tying his cravat, and teasing the divinity student look out of his side-hair. My little dandy Billy came in for another share of attention, and when I managed to button his jacket for him so that it showed his shirt-studs "like a man's," Count d'Orsay could not have felt a more pleasing sense of his sufficiency for all the demands of the gay world.

When we reached the parlor we found Pa and Ma

Lovegrove already receiving. About a score of guests had arrived. Most of them were old married couples, which, after paying their devoirs, fell in two like unriveted scissors, — the gentlemen finding a new pivot in pa and the ladies in ma, where they mildly opened and shut upon such questions as severally concerned them, such as “the way gold closed,” and “how the children were.”

Besides the old married people there were several old young men of distinctly hopeless and unmarried aspect, who, having nothing in common with the other class, nor sufficient energy of character to band themselves for mutual protection, hovered dejectedly about the arch pillars, or appeared to be considering whether, on the whole, it would not be feasible and best to sit down on the centre-table. These subsisted upon such crumbs of comfort as Lu could get an occasional chance to throw them by rapid sorties of conversation, — became galvanically active the moment they were punched up, and fell flat the moment the punching was remitted. I did all I could for them, but, having Daniel in tow, dared not sail too near the edge of the Doldrums, lest he should drop into sympathetic stagnation and be taken preternaturally bashful, with his sails all aback, just as I wanted to carry him gallantly into action with some clipper-built cruiser of a nice young lady. Finally, Lu bethought herself of that last plank of drowning conversationists, the photograph album. All the dejected young men made for it at once, some reaching it just as

they were about to sink for the last time, but all getting a grip on it somehow, and staying there in company with other people's babies whom they didn't know, and celebrities whom they knew to death, until, one by one, they either stranded upon a motherly dowager by the Fire-place Shoals, or were rescued from the Sofa Reef by some gallant wrecker of a strong-minded young lady, with a view to taking salvage out of them in the German.

Besides these were already arrived a dozen nice little boys and girls, who had been invited to make it pleasant for Billy. I had to remind him of the fact that they were his guests, for, in comparison with the queen of his affections, they were in danger of being despised by him as small fry.

The younger ladies and gentlemen, — those who had fascinations to disport, or were in the habit of disporting what they considered such, were probably still at home consulting the looking-glass until that oracle should announce the auspicious moment for their setting forth.

Daniel was in conversation with a perfect godsend of a girl, who understood Latin and had begun Greek. Billy was taking a moment's vacation from his boys and girls, busy with "Old Maid" in the extension-room, and whispering, with his hand in mine, "Oh, don't I wish *she* were here!" when a fresh invoice of ladies, just unpacked from the dressing-room in all the airy elegance of evening costume, floated through the door. I heard Lu say, —

"Ah, Mrs. Rumbullion! Happy to see your niece, too. How d'ye do, Miss Pilgrim?"

At this last word Billy jumped as if he had been shot, and the bevy of ladies opening about sister Lu disclosed the charming face and figure of the pretty girl we had met at Barnum's.

Billy's countenance rapidly changed from astonishment to joy.

"Isn't that splendid, Uncle Teddy? Just as I was wishing it! It's just like the fairy books!" and, rushing up to the party of new-comers, "My dear Lottie!" cried he, "if I'd only known you were coming I'd have gone after you!"

As he caught her by the hand I was pleased to see her soft eyes brighten with gratification at his enthusiasm, but my sister Lu looked on naturally with astonishment in every feature.

"Why, Billy!" said she, "you ought not to call a strange young lady '*Lottie!*' Miss Pilgrim, you must excuse my wild boy" —

"And you must excuse my mother, Lottie," said Billy, affectionately patting Miss Pilgrim's rose kid, "for calling you a strange young lady. You are not strange at all, — you're just as nice a girl as there is."

"There are no excuses necessary," said Miss Pilgrim, with a bewitching little laugh. "Billy and I know each other intimately well, Mrs. Lovegrove; and I confess that when I heard the lady aunt had been invited to visit was his mother, I felt all the more willing to in-



fringe etiquette this evening by coming where I had no previous introduction."

"Don't you care!" said Billy, encouragingly. "I'll introduce you to every one of our family; I know 'em if you don't."

At this moment I came up as Billy's reinforcement, and fearing lest in his enthusiasm he might forget the canon of society which introduces a gentleman to a lady, not the lady to him, I ventured to suggest it delicately by saying, —

"Billy, will you grant me the favor of a presentation to Miss Pilgrim?"

"In a minute, Uncle Teddy," answered Billy, considerably lowering his voice. "The older people first;" and after this reproof I was left to wait in the cold until he had gone through the ceremony of introducing to the young lady his father and his mother.

Billy, who had now assumed entire guardianship of Miss Pilgrim, with an air of great dignity intrusted her to my care and left us promenading while he went in search of Daniel. I myself looked in vain for that youth, whom I had not seen since the entrance of the last comers. Miss Pilgrim and I found a congenial common ground in Billy, whom she spoke of as one of the most delightfully original boys she had ever met; in fact, altogether the most fascinating young gentleman she had seen in New York society. You may be sure it wasn't Billy's left ear which burned when I made my responses.



In five minutes he reappeared to announce, in a tone of disappointment, that he could find Daniel nowhere. He could see a light through his keyhole, but the door was locked and he could get no admittance. Just then Lu came up to present a certain — no, an uncertain — young man of the fleet stranded on parlor furniture earlier in the evening. To Lu's great astonishment Miss Pilgrim asked Billy's permission to leave him. It was granted with all the courtesy of a *preux chevalier*, on the condition, readily assented to by the lady, that she should dance one Lancers with him during the evening.

"Dear me!" exclaimed Lu, after Billy had gone back like a superior being to assist at the childish amusement of his contemporaries. "Would anybody ever suppose that was our Billy?"

"I should, my dear sister," said I, with proud satisfaction; "but you remember I always was just to Billy."

Left free I went myself to hunt up Daniel. I found his door locked and a light showing through the keyhole, as Billy had stated. I made no attempt to enter by knocking; but going to my room and opening the window next his, leaned out as far as I could, shoved up his sash with my cane, and pushed aside his curtain. Such an unusual method of communication could not fail to bring him to the window with a rush. When he saw me he trembled like a guilty thing, his countenance fell,

and, no longer able to feign absence, he unlocked his door and let me enter by the normal mode.

"Why, Daniel Lovegrove, my nephew, what does this mean? Are you sick?"

"Uncle Edward, I am not sick, — and this means that I am a fool. Even a little boy like Billy puts me to shame. I feel humbled to the very dust. I wish I'd been a missionary and got massacred by savages. Oh that I'd been permitted to wear damp stockings in childhood, or that my mother hadn't carried me through the measles! If it weren't wrong to take my life into my own hands, I'd open that window, and — and — sit in a draught this very evening! Oh, yes! I'm just that bitter! Oh, oh, oh!"

And Daniel paced the floor with strides of frenzy.

"Well, my dear fellow, let's look at the matter calmly a minute. What brought on this sudden attack? You seemed doing well enough the first ten minutes after we came down. I was only out of your sight long enough to speak to the Rumbullion party who had just come in, and when I turned around you were gone. Now you are in this fearful condition. What is there in the Rumbullions to start you off on such a bender of bashfulness as this which I here behold?"

"Rumbullion indeed!" said Daniel. "A hundred Rumbullions could not make me feel as I do. But *she* can shake me into a whirlwind with her little finger; and *she* came with the Rumbullions!"

“What ! D’you ← Miss Pilgrim ?”

“Miss Pilgrim !”

I labored with Daniel for ten minutes, using every encouragement and argument I could think of, and finally threatened him that I would bring up the whole Rum-bullion party, Miss Pilgrim included, telling them that he had invited them to look at his conchological cabinet, unless he instantly shook the ice out of his manner and accompanied me downstairs. This dreadful menace had the desired effect. He knew that I would not scruple to fulfil it; and at the same time that it made him surrender, it also provoked him with me to a degree which gave his eyes and cheeks as fine a glow as I could have wished for the purpose of a favorable impression. The stimulus of wrath was good for him, and there was little tremor in his knees when he descended the stairs. Well-a-day ! So Daniel and Billy were rivals ! .

The latter gentleman met us at the foot of the staircase.

“Oh, there you are, Daniel !” said he, cheerily. “I was just going to look after you and Uncle Teddy. We’ve wanted you for the dances. We’ve had the Lancers twice and three round dances; and I danced the second Lancers with Lottie. Now we’re going to play some games, — to amuse the children, you know,” he added, loftily, with the adult gesture of pointing his thumb over his shoulder at the extension-room. “Lottie’s going to play, too; so will you and Daniel, wont you, uncle ? Oh, here comes Lottie now ! This is my

brother, Miss Pilgrim, — let me introduce him to you. I'm sure you'll like him. There's nothing he don't know."

Miss Pilgrim had just come to the newel-post of the staircase, and, when she looked into Daniel's face, blushed like the red, red rose, losing her self-possession perceptibly more than Daniel.

The courage of weak warriors and timid gallants mounts as the opposite party's falls, and Daniel made out to say, in a firm tone, that it was long since he had enjoyed the pleasure of meeting Miss Pilgrim.

"Not since Mrs. Crameroud's last sociable, I think," replied Miss Pilgrim, her cheeks and eyes still playing the tell-tale.

"Oho! so you don't want any introduction!" exclaimed Master Billy. "I didn't know you knew each other, Lottie?"

"I have met Mr. Lovegrove in society. Shall we go and join in the plays?"

"To be sure we shall!" cried Billy. "You needn't mind, — all the grown people are going to."

On entering the parlor we found it as he had said. The guests being almost all well acquainted with each other, at the solicitation of jolly little Mrs. Bloomingal, sister Lu had consented to make a pleasant Christmas kind of time of it, in which everybody was permitted to be young again, and romp with the rompiest. We played Blindman's-buff till we were tired of that, — Daniel, to Lu's great delight, coming out splen-

didly as Blindman, and evincing such "cheek" in the style he hunted down and caught the ladies, as satisfied me that nothing but his eyesight stood in the way of his making an audacious figure in the world. Then a pretty little girl, Tilly Turtelle, who seemed quite a premature flirt, proposed "Door-keeper," — a suggestion accepted with great *éclat* by all the children, several grown people assenting.

To Billy — quite as much on account of his shining prominence in the executive faculties as of his character as host — was committed the duty of counting out the first person to be sent into the hall. There were so many of us that "Aina-maina-mona-mike" would not go quite round; but, with that promptness of expedient which belongs to genius, Billy instantly added on, "Intery-mintery-cutery-corn," and the last word of the cabalistic formula fell upon me, — Edward Balbus. I disappeared into the entry amidst peals of happy laughter from both old and young, calling, when the door opened again to ask me whom I wanted, for the pretty lisping flirt who had proposed the game. After giving me a coquettish little chirrup of a kiss, and telling me my beard scratched, she bade me, on my return, send out to her "Mithter Billy Lovegrove." I obeyed her; my youngest nephew retired; and after a couple of seconds, during which Tilly undoubtedly got what she proposed the game for, Billy being a great favorite with the little girls, she came back, pouting and blushing, to announce that he wanted Miss Pilgrim. That young lady showed

no mock-modesty, but arose at once, and laughingly went out to her youthful admirer, who, as I afterward learned, embraced her ardently, and told her he loved her better than any girl in the world. As he turned to go back, she told him that he might send to her one of her juvenile cousins, Reginald Rumbullion. Now, whether because on this youthful Rumbullion's account Billy had suffered the pangs of that most terrible passion, jealousy, or from his natural enjoyment of playing practical jokes destructive of all dignity in his elders, Billy marched into the room, and, having shut the door behind him, paralyzed the crowded parlor by an announcement that Mr. Daniel Lovegrove was wanted.

I was standing at his side, and could feel him tremble, — see him turn pale.

"Dear me!" he whispered, in a choking voice; "can she mean me?"

"Of course she does," said I. "Who else? Do you hesitate? Surely you can't refuse such an invitation from a lady."

"No, I suppose not," said he, mechanically. And amidst much laughter from the disinterested, while the faces of Mrs. Rumbullion and his mother were spectacles of crimson astonishment, he made his exit from the room. Never in my life did I so much long for that instrument described by Mr. Samuel Weller, — a pair of patent double-million-magnifying microscopes of hextry power, to see through a deal door. Instead of this, I had to learn what happened only by report.

Lottle Pilgrim was standing under the hall burners with her elbow on the newel-post, looking more vividly charming than he had ever seen her before at Mrs. Cramercroud's sociable or elsewhere. When startled by the apparition of Mr. Daniel Lovegrove instead of the little Rumbullion whom she was expecting, — she had no time to exclaim or hide her mounting color, none at all to explain to her own mind the mistake that had occurred, before his arm was clasped around her waist, and his lips so closely pressed to hers, that through her soft thick hair she could feel the throbbing of his temples. As for Daniel, he seemed in a walking dream, from which he waked to see Miss Pilgrim looking into his eyes with utter though not incensed stupefaction, — to stammer, —

“Forgive me! Do forgive me! I thought you were in earnest.”

“So I was,” she said, tremulously, as soon as she could catch her voice, “in sending for my cousin Reginald.”

“Oh, dear, what shall I do! Believe me, I was told you wanted me, — let me go and explain it to mother, — she'll tell the rest, — I couldn't do it, — I'd die of mortification. Oh, that wretched boy Billy!”

On the principle already mentioned, his agitation reassured her.

“Don't try to explain it now, — it may get Billy a scolding. Are there any but intimate family friends here this evening?”



"No — I believe — no — I'm sure," replied Daniel, collecting his faculties.

"Then I don't mind what they think. Perhaps they'll suppose we've known each other long; but we'll arrange it by-and-by. They'll think the more of it the longer we stay out here, — hear them laugh! I must run back now. I'll send you somebody."

A round of juvenile applause greeted her as she hurried into the parlor, and a number of grown people smiled quite musically. Her quick woman-wit showed her how to retaliate and divide the embarrassment of the occasion. As she passed me, she said in an undertone, —

"Answer quick! Who's that fat lady on the sofa that laughs so loud?"

"Mrs. Cromwell Craggs," said I, as quietly.

Miss Pilgrim made a satirically low courtesy, and spoke in a modest but distinct voice, —

"I really must be excused for asking. I'm a stranger, you know; but is there such a lady here as Mrs. Craggs, — Mrs. *Cromwell* Craggs? For if so, the present door-keeper would like to see Mrs. Cromwell Craggs."

Then came the turn of the fat lady to be laughed at; but out she had to go and get kissed like the rest of us.

Before the close of the evening, Billy was made as jealous as his parents and I were surprised to see Daniel in close conversation with Miss Pilgrim among the geraniums and fuschias of the conservatory. "A regular flirtation," said Billy, somewhat indignantly. The con-

clusion which they arrived at was, that after all no great harm had been done, and that the dear little fellow ought not to be peached on for his fun. If I had known at the time how easily they forgave him, I should have suspected that the offence Billy had led Daniel into committing was not unlikely to be repeated on the offender's own account; but so much as I could see showed me that the ice was broken.

Billy's jealousy did not outlast the party. He became more and more interested in "his girl," and often went in the afternoon, after getting out of school, ostensibly to play with Jimmy. Daniel's calls, according to adult etiquette made in the evening, did not interfere with my younger nephew's, and as neither knew that the other, after his fashion, was his most uncompromising rival, my position as the confidant of both was one of extreme delicacy. But the matter was more speedily settled than I expected.

Billy came to me one day and told me that he intended to get married immediately; that he was going to speak to his Lottie that very afternoon. He was prepared to meet every objection. He had asked his father if he might, and his father said yes, if he had money enough to support a wife, — and Billy thought he had. He'd saved up all the money his Uncle Tom and Aunt Jane had sent him for Christmas; and besides, if he were once married, his father wouldn't see him want for stamps, he knew. Then, too, he was going to leave school and be a merchant next year. — and I'd help him now and

then, if he got hard up, wouldn't I? If he were driven to it, he could be a good boy again, and save up the money to buy Lottie dresses instead of giving it to nasty old "Objecks." He was so much older than when he had the savings-bank, that he ought to have at least ten cents a day now for being good: didn't I think that was fair? As to his age, if Lottie loved him he didn't care, — any way he'd be lots bigger than she was before long, — and he'd often heard his ma say she approved of early marriages; her's and pa's was one. So he ran off up Livingston Place, the most undaunted lover that ever put extra shine on his proposal boots, or spent half an hour on the bow of his popping neck-tie.

Shortly after Daniel went into the street. Not meaning to call upon his *inamorata*, but, drawn by the irresistible fascination of passing her house, he strolled in the direction that Billy had gone. As he came to the Rumbullions' something suddenly bade him enter, — a whim he called it, but not his own, — one of the whims of Destiny, which are always gratified.

"Yes, sir," said the servant, "Miss Pilgrim is in. I will call her."

His step was always light. He passed noiselessly into the front-parlor, and sat down among the heavy brocette curtains which shadowed a recess of one of the windows. He supposed Miss Pilgrim to be upstairs, and while his heart fluttered, expecting her footfall at the parlor-door, he heard an earnest, boyish voice in the extension-room. Looking from his concealment, he be-

held Miss Pilgrim on a sofa in the pier, and sitting by her side, with her hand clasped in his, his brother Billy. Before he could avoid it, he became aware that Billy was unconsciously but eagerly forestalling him.

"Now, Lottie, my dear Lottie! I wish you would! I'll do everything I can to make you happy. If you'll only marry me, I'll be good all the time! Come, now! Say yes! Father's got a real nice place over the stable, — they only use it for a tool-room now; we could clear it out and have it scrubbed, and go to house-keeping right away. Ma 'd let us have all her old set of china; I've got a silver mug Uncle Teddy gave me, and a napkin-ring and four spoons. As soon as I make my money I'll buy you a nice carriage and horses, any color you want 'em. Oh, my darling, darling Lottie, I do love you so much, and we could have such a splendid time! Do say yes, Lottie, — please, *do please!*"

Miss Pilgrim looked at the earnest little suitor with a face in which tender interest and compassion quite overrode any sense of the whimsicality of the situation which might lurk there. Daniel's astonishment at the sight was so great that he realized the entire state of the case before he could recover himself sufficiently to rise and go into the back-room.

Billy jumped up and looked defiantly at the intruder. Miss Pilgrim blushed violently, but turned away her head to avoid the exhibition of a still more convulsing emotion than embarrassment.

"I must beg your pardon, Miss Pilgrim, — and yours

too, Billy," began Daniel in a hesitating way, hardly knowing how to treat the posture in which he found things; "but—you see—the fact is—the servant said she'd go to announce me—and really, when I came in, I hadn't any idea you were here, or Billy either."

"Then," said Billy, moderating the defiant attitude, "you truly weren't dodging around and trying to find out what Lottie and I were about on the sly? Well, I'll believe you. I'm sure you couldn't be as mean as that when I'm the only brother you've got, that always brings you oranges when you're sick, and never plays ball on the stairs when you've got a headache. Now, then, I'll trust you. I've been asking Lottie to marry me, and I want you to help me. Ask her if she wont, Daniel,—see if she wont do it for you!"

Miss Pilgrim had been trying to find words; but her face was too much for her, and she was obliged to seek retirement in her handkerchief. As she drew it from her pocket a well-worn piece of paper followed it and fell upon the floor. Billy picked it up before she noticed it, and was about to hand it to her, when his jealous eye fell upon a withered rosebud sewed to its margin. As he looked at it, with his little brows knit into a precocious sternness, he recognized his brother's handwriting immediately beneath the flower. It was one of the daily anonymous sonnets of which Daniel had told me, and the bud a relic of the bouquet accompanying it. Still Daniel was silent. What else could he be?

"Very well, very well, Master Daniel!" exclaimed

Billy, in a voice trembling with grief and indignation; "there's good enough reason why you wont speak a word for me! You want her yourself,—here it is in your own writing. No wonder you wont tell Lottie to be my wife when your trying to take her away from me. O Lottie, dear Lottie! I love you just as much as he does, though I don't know everything, and can't write you poetry like it was out of the Fifth Reader! Daniel, how could you go and write to my Lottie this way: 'my churner,'—no, it isn't churner, it's 'charmer,'—'let me call thee mine?'"

Forgetting the sacredness of private MS. in that of private grief, he would have gone on, with a pause here and there for certainty of spelling, to the conclusion of the poem, had not Lottie sprung up with her imploring face suffused by her discovery, for the first time, of the identity of her secret lover and the escape of his sonnet from her pocket. It was too late! There he stood before her unmistakably proved, and himself unmistakably proving in what estimation she held his verses and bouquets.

"O Billy, dear Billy! if you do love me don't do so!" So exclaiming, she held out her hand, and Billy put the MS. into it with all the dignity of a wounded spirit.

"Mr. Lovegrove," said Miss Pilgrim, "I don't know what to say."

"I feel very much that way myself," said Daniel.

"I don't!" said Billy, now in command of his voice.



"I'll tell you what it is : perhaps Daniel didn't know how much I wanted you, Lottie,— and perhaps he wants you 'most as bad as I do. But whatever way it is, I want you to choose between us fair and square and no dodging. Come now ! You can take just whichever one of us you please, and the other wont lay up any grudge, though I know if that's me or like me he'll feel awful. You can have till to-morrow morning to make up your mind between me and Daniel; and if he wont say anything about it to pa and ma till then I wont. Good-by, *dear* Lottie !"

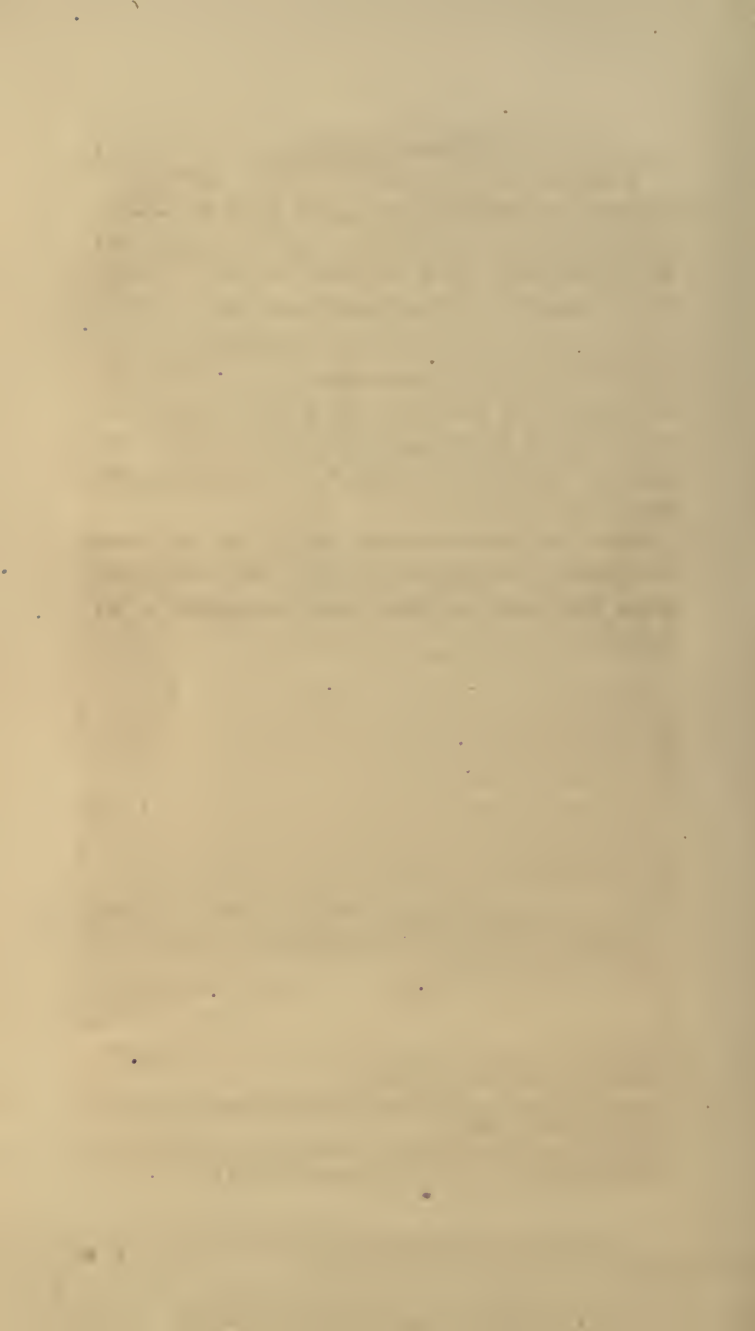
He drew her face down to his, kissed her most affectionately, and then marched out of the door, feeling, as he afterwards told me, as if he'd blacked his boots all for nothing. Ah me ! my dear Billy, how many times we do that in this world ! Of what followed when Daniel and Miss Pilgrim were left alone I have never had full details.

But I do know that the young lady obeyed Billy and made her choice. Six months after that both my nephews stood up in Mrs. Rumbullion's parlor to take their several shares in a ceremony of which Miss Pilgrim was the central figure when it began, and Mrs. Daniel Lovegrove when it concluded. Time and the elasticity of boyhood had so closed the sharp but evanescent wound in Billy's heart that he could stand the trial of being groomsman where he had wanted to be groom, — more especially since he was supported



through the emergency by a little sister of Lottie's, who promises to be wondrously like her by the time Billy can stand up in the more enviable capacity. Neither Daniel nor Lottie would listen to any objection to such a groomsman on the score of his extreme youth; for, as they said, Billy had been quite as instrumental in bringing them together as any agent save the Divinity shaping all the ends and tying all the knots in which there are heart-strings concerned as well as white ribbon.

Since then Lu has stopped wishing that Billy were like Daniel, for she sees that, if he had been, there would never have been any Mrs. Daniel Lovegrove in the world.



POPULAR AND VALUABLE BOOKS,  
FOR OLD AND YOUNG,  
PUBLISHED BY LEE & SHEPARD,  
149 WASHINGTON STREET, BOSTON.

---

LEE AND SHEPARD'S CATALOGUE and TRADE LIST sent by mail, post paid,  
on application.

---

OLIVER OPTIC'S BOOKS.

*Each Series in a neat box. Sold in sets or separately.*

Young America Abroad. Outward Bound; or  
Young America Afloat. Tenth edition. Now ready. \$1.50.

Army and Navy Stories. A Library for Young  
and Old, in six volumes. 16mo. Illustrated. Price \$1.50 per vol. The Soldier  
Boy, or Tom Somers in the Army; The Sailor Boy, or Jack Somers in the Navy;  
The Young Lieutenant, or The Adventurer of an Army Officer—A Sequel to the  
Soldier Boy; The Yankee Middy, or The Adventures of a Naval Officer—Sequel  
to The Sailor Boy; Fighting Joe, or The Fortunes of a Staff Officer—A Sequel to  
The Young Lieutenant; Brave Old Salt, or Life on the Quarter-Deck—A Sequel to  
The Yankee Middy. The whole series are admirably illustrated, printed and bound  
in the best style, and may be obtained in sets in neat boxes, or be had separate.

Woodville Stories. Uniform with Library for  
Young People. Six volumes. 16mo. Illustrated. \$1.25 per vol. Rich and  
Humble, or the Mission of Bertha Grant; In School and Out, or the Conquest of  
Richard Grant; Watch and Wait, or The Young Fugitives; Work and Win, or  
Noddy Newman on a Cruise; Hope and Have, or Fanny Grant among the Indians;  
Haste and Waste, or The Young Pilot of Lake Champlain. Each volume hand-  
somely illustrated, and complete in itself, or in sets in neat boxes.

Famous "Boat-Club" Series. Library for Young  
People. Handsomely Illustrated. Six volumes, in neat box; per volume, \$1.25.  
Comprising: The Boat Club, or The Bunkers of Rippleton; All Aboard, or Life  
on the Lake; Now or Never, or The Adventures of Bobby Bright; Try Again, or  
The Trials and Triumphs of Harry West; Poor and Proud, or The Fortunes of  
Katy Redbarn; Little by Little, or The Cruise of the Flyaway.

Riverdale Story-Books. Six volumes, profusely  
illustrated from new designs by Billings. In neat box. Cloth. Per volume, 45c.  
Comprising: Little Merchant; Young Voyagers; Dolly and I; Proud and Lazy;  
Careless Kate; Robinson Crusoe, Jr.

Flora Lee Story-Books. Companions to the above.  
Six volumes, profusely illustrated from new designs by Billings. In neat box.  
Cloth. Per volume, 45c. Comprising: Christmas Gift; Uncle Ben; Birthday  
Party; The Picnic Party; The Gold Thumb; The Do-Somethings.

The above two series are also published in twelve volumes, under the title of  
Riverdale Stories. They are divided for convenience of both buyer and seller,  
or can be had, twelve volumes, in a neat box.

The Way of the World. By William T. Adams  
(Oliver Optic). 12mo. \$2.00.

Oliver Optic's Magazine, "Our Boys and Girls."  
Published Weekly. Fully Illustrated. Per number, 6 cents; \$2.50 per year.

## *Lee and Shepard's Publications.*

---

**The Negro in the American Rebellion; his Heroism and his Fidelity.** By William Wells Brown. Sold by subscription. \$2.00.

**Our Convicts.** Two volumes in one. By Miss Mary Carpenter. pp. 293 and 380. Octavo. \$4.50.

**On the Border.** By Edmund Kirke. \$1.75.

**Orographic Geology; or, The Origin and Structure of Mountains.** By George L. Vose, Civil Engineer. 8vo. Cloth. \$3.00.

**Practical and Scientific Fruit Culture.** By Charles R. Baker, Dorchester Nurseries. One volume. 8vo. Cloth. \$4.00.

**Robinson Crusoe.** 12mo. Muslin gilt. With sixteen full-page illustrations. (The edition formerly published by Phillips, Sampson & Company.) \$1.75.

**Redeemer and Redeemed; an Investigation of the Attainment and of Eternal Judgment.** By the Rev. Charles Beecher, Pastor of the Congregational Church, Georgetown, Mass. \$1.75.

**Reason in Religion.** By Rev. F. H. Hedge, D. D. One volume. Crown octavo. \$2.00.

**Reid's (Captain Mayne) Books.** Each volume handsomely illustrated. Sold in sets or separate. Per volume, \$1.75. The Wild Huntress, or Love in the Wilderness; The Wood-Rangers, or The Trappers of Sonora; Wild Life, or Adventures on the Frontier; Hunter's Feast, or Conversations around the Camp-Fire; The Scalp-Hunters, or Adventures among the Trappers; The White Chief, a Legend of Northern Mexico; The Rifle-Rangers, or Adventures in Southern Mexico; The War Trail, or The Hunt of the Wild Horse; The Quadroon, or a Lover's Adventures in Louisiana; Osceola, the Seminole, or the Red Fawn of the Flower Land; The Rangers and Regulators of the Tahama, or Life among the Lawless; The Maroon, or Planter Life in Jamaica; The Tiger-Hunter, or a Hero in spite of himself; Lost Leonore.

**Religious Duty.** By Frances Power Cobbe. 12mo. Cloth, bevelled sides. \$1.75.

**Studies, New and Old, of Ethical and Social Subjects.** By Frances Power Cobbe. Crown 8vo. \$3.00. Contents: Christian Ethics and the Ethics of Christ; Self-Development and Self-Abnegation; The Sacred Books of the Zoroastrians; The Philosophy of the Poor Laws; The Rights of Man and the Claims of Brutes; The Morals of Literature; The Hierarchy of Art; Decemnovenarianism; Hades.

**Shakings.** Etchings from the Naval Academy. By a Member of the Class of '67. \$5.00.

**"Swingin' Round the Circle."** A new volume, by Petroleum V. Nasby; containing his late humorous contributions to our political history, with new matter never before published. Appropriately illustrated by T. Nast. 12mo. \$1.50.

**Stories and Sketches.** By our best Authors. (In press.)

**Serpents in the Doves' Nest.** By John Todd, D. D. Paper 15 cts.; cloth, 50 cts.

**The Soldier's Story of his Captivity at Andersonville, Belle Isle, and other Rebel Prisons.** By Warren Lee Goss, of the Second Massachusetts Heavy Artillery. Illustrated by Thomas Nast. 12mo. (Sold by subscription.) \$2.00.

*Lee and Shepard's Publications.*

---

A Trip to the Azores, or Western Islands. By M. Borges De F. Henriques. 16mo. \$1.50.

Bacon's Essays. With Annotations by Archbishop Whately. In press; new edition. This edition will contain a Preface, Notes, and Glossarial Index, by F. F. Heard, Esq., of the Boston Bar. It will be printed in the very best style, by Messrs. J. Wilson & Son, of Cambridge, and will undoubtedly be the finest edition ever published in this country.

The Blade and the Ear. Thoughts for a Young Man. By Rev. A. B. Muzzey. 16mo. Red edges, bvd sides, \$1.50; plain, \$1.25.

The College, the Market, and the Court; or, Woman's Relation to Education, Employment, and Citizenship. By Mrs. Caroline H. Dall. (In press.)

Darryll Gap; or, Whether it Paid. A novel. By Miss Virginia F. Townsend. One volume. 12mo. pp. 456. \$1.75.

Dearborn's American Text-Book of Letters; with a Diagram of the Capital Script Alphabet. By N. S. Dearborn. Oblong. \$1.50.

Diary, from March 4, 1861, to November 13, 1862. By Adam Gurowski. \$1.75.

Dissertations and Discussions. By John Stuart Mill. Three volumes. 12mo. Cloth. \$6.75.

The Examination of the Philosophy of Sir William Hamilton. By John Stuart Mill. Two volumes. 12mo. Cloth. Per vol., \$2.25.

The Positive Philosophy of Auguste Comte. By John Stuart Mill. One volume. 12mo. Cloth. \$1.25.

Elements of Heraldry; containing an Explanation of the Principles of the Science, and a Glossary of the Technical Terms employed. With an Essay upon the use of Coat-Armor in the United States. By William H. Whitmore. 8vo. Cloth. \$6.00.

Essays: Philosophical and Theological. By James Martineau. Crown octavo. Tinted paper. \$2.50.

Facts about Peat as an Article of Fuel. By T. H. Leavitt. 12mo. \$1.75.

First Historical Transformations of Christianity. By A. Coquerel. Translated by Prof. E. P. Evans, of Michigan University. 12mo. \$1.25.

First Years in Europe. By G. H. Calvert, author of "Scenes and Thoughts in Europe," "The Gentleman," etc. 1 vol. 12mo. \$1.75.

The Gold-Hunter's Adventures; or, Life in Australia. By W. H. Thomas, a Returned Australian. Illust. by Champney. \$2.00.

The Bushrangers: A Yankee's Adventures during his second visit to Australia. By W. H. Thomas, author of the "Gold-Hunter's Adventures; or, Life in Australia." One vol. 12mo. Handsomely Illust. \$2.00.

God in his Providence. By Rev. W. M. Fernald. 12mo. Cloth. \$1.50.

*Lee and Shepard's Publications.*

---

Glimpses of History. By George M. Towle.  
One volume. 16mo. Bevelled boards. \$1.50.

The Heavenly Father: Lectures on Modern Atheism. By Ernest Naville, late Professor of Philosophy in the University of Geneva. Translated from the French, by Henry Dorton, M. A. Published in a handsome 16mo volume. \$1.75.

Home Life: What it Is, and What it Needs. By Rev. J. F. W. Ware. 16mo. Cloth, red edges, bevelled sides. \$1.25.

Herman; or Young Knighthood. By E. Foxton.  
Two volumes. 12mo. \$3.50.

Historical Sketch of the Old Sixth Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers, during its three campaigns in 1861, 1862, 1863, and 1864; containing the History of the several Companies previous to 1861, and the name and military record of each man connected with the regiment during the war. By John W. Hanson, Chaplain. Illustrated by photographs. 12mo. \$2.50.

Hospital Life in the Army of the Potomac. By William Howell Reed. 16mo. \$1.25.

The Irish Ninth in Bivouac and Battle. By M. H. Macnamara, late Captain in the Ninth Massachusetts Regiment. Illustrated. 12mo. Cloth. Sold by subscription. \$2.00.

In Trust; or Dr. Bertrand's Household. By Miss Douglas. One volume. 12mo. \$1.50.

Stephen Dane. By Miss Douglas, author of "In Trust." \$1.50.

Some of the Thoughts of Joseph Joubert. With a Biographical Notice. By G. H. Calvert. 16mo. Tinted paper. Cloth, bvd. \$1.50.

Life of Jesus. According to his Original Biographers. By Edmund Kirke. 16mo. \$1.50.

Lincolniana. In one volume, small quarto. pp. viii. and 344. (Only 250 copies printed.) \$6.00.

The Little Helper. A Memoir of Florence Annie Caswell. By Lavina S. Goodwin. (In press.)

The Life and Works of Gotthold Ephraim Lessing. Translated from the German of Adolf Starr, by E. P. Evans, Ph. D., Michigan University. Two volumes, crown octavo. \$5.00.

Little Brother, and other Stories. By Fitz Hugh Ludlow. (In press.)

Manual of the Evidences of Christianity. For Classes and Private Reading. By Rev. S. G. Bulfinch, D. D. 12mo. \$1.25.

Martyria; or, Andersonville Prison. By Lieutenant-Colonel A. C. Hamlin, late Medical Inspector in the Army. Illustrated with maps and cuts. One volume. 12mo. \$2.00.

Memoir of Timothy Gilbert. By Rev. J. D. Fulton, of Tremont Temple, Boston. With Portrait. One volume. 12mo. \$1.50.

Neighbors' Wives. By J. T. Trowbridge. 12mo. Cloth. \$1.50.



## *Lee and Shepard's Publications.*

---

Twice Taken. A Tale of the Maritime British Provinces. By Charles W. Hall. 12mo. \$1.75.

Ten Months in Brazil. By Captain John Codman ("Ringbolt"). In press.

Talks on Women's Topics. By Jennie June. One volume. 12mo. Gilt Tops. \$1.75.

A Thousand a Year. By Mrs. E. M. Bruce. One volume. 16mo. \$1.25.

Three Years in the Army of the Potomac. By Captain Henry N. Blake, Eleventh Mass. Volunteers. One vol. 12mo. \$1.50.

Thomas à Becket. A Tragedy, and other Poems. By G. H. Hollister. 16mo. \$1.75.

A View at the Foundations; or, First Causes of Character. By Rev. W. M. Fernald. 12mo. Cloth. \$1.00.

The White Mountain Guide-Book. By Samuel C. Eastman. \$1.50.

Why Not? A Book for every Woman. By Prof. H. R. Storer, M. D. 16mo. Cloth, \$1.00; paper, 50 cts.

Dillaway's Latin Classics. Cicero de Senectute, et de Amicitia; Cicero de Officiis; Cicero de Oratore—two volumes; Cicero Tusculanæ Quæstiones—two volumes; Cicero de Natura de Orum—two volumes; Tacitus Germania et Agricola; Terence; Quintilian; Plautus. Per vol., \$1.00.

French Written as Pronounced; a Manual of French Pronunciation, with Extracts from the French Classics, written in Phonetic Characters. By Adrien Feline. Revised, with additions by Wm. Watson, Ph. D. One volume. 16mo. \$1.25.

First Lessons in Reading; a New Method of Teaching the Reading of English, by which the ear is trained to discriminate the elementary sounds of words, and the eye to recognize the signs used for these sounds in the established Orthography. By Richard Soule, editor of Worcester's Quarto Dictionary, and William A. Wheeler, editor of Webster's Quarto Dictionary. 16mo. Boards. 35 cts. Sequel to the above. (In preparation).

Charts, designed to accompany the "First Lessons in Reading (on a new method)," and a Sequel to the same. By Richard Soule and William A. Wheeler. Price of the series (six charts), mounted on stiff binders' board, \$2.50; any two thus mounted, \$1.00; single Charts (not mounted), 30c.

These last will be sent by mail to any address, on receipt of the price; they will be found very convenient for posting upon the walls of the school-room.

A Manual of English Pronunciation and Spelling; containing a full Alphabetical Vocabulary of the Language, with a preliminary exposition of the English Orthoepy and Orthography, and designed as a work of reference for general use, and as a Text-Book in schools. By Richard Soule, Jr., A. M., and Wm. A. Wheeler, A. M. A convenient Manual for consultation. \$2.00.

Kindergarten Spelling Book. Part First. By Ella Little. 16mo. Boards. 25 cts.

The Phonic Primer and Primary Reader. By Rev. J. C. Zachos. 12mo. Boards. 35 cts.





UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



A 000 142 887 9

University of California  
SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY  
405 Hilgard Avenue, Los Angeles, CA 90024-1388  
Return this material to the library  
from which it was borrowed.

11-8-92

DAYS DUE

APR 03 1995

LF  
2 WEEK LOAN

APRIL 14

Univ  
S